

ADVANCED AND CONTEMPORARY STUDIES IN SOCIAL, HUMAN AND ADMINISTRATIVE SCIENCES



EDITOR
Assoc. Prof. SERAP SARIBAŞ



**ADVANCED AND
CONTEMPORARY STUDIES
IN SOCIAL, HUMAN AND
ADMINISTRATIVE SCIENCE**

EDITOR

Assoc. Prof. SERAP SARIBAŞ



Advanced and Contemporary Studies in Social, Human and Administrative Science

Editor: Assoc. Prof. Serap SARIBAŞ

Editor in chief: Berkan Balpetek

Cover and Page Design: Duvar Design

Printing : December -2023

Publisher Certificate No: 49837

ISBN: 978-625-6585-95-9

© Duvar Yayınları

853 Sokak No:13 P.10 Kemeraltı-Konak/İzmir

Tel: 0 232 484 88 68

www.duvar yayinlari.com

duvarkitabevi@gmail.com

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER 1.....6

THE POWER OF THE UNSPOKEN: BECKETT'S MUTE PHASES IN
LITERATURE AND ADORNO'S AESTHETIC FRAMEWORK
C. DOĞAN YAŞAT

CHAPTER 2.....18

AN HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE OF WOMEN MOVEMENT IN EGYPT
DUYGU GÜDEKLİ

CHAPTER 3.....32

THE COMMON COUNTER-TERRORISM POLICY IN EUROPEAN UNION
LAW: AN ASSESSMENT OF THE "2020 EU SECURITY UNION
STRATEGY" IN ITS THIRD YEAR1
EDA ÜNAL

CHAPTER 4.....55

DIRECT DEMOCRACY IN THE CONTEXT OF PARTICIPATORY
GOVERNMENT: IS IT POSSIBLE TODAY?
İBRAHİM HALİL GÜZEL

CHAPTER 5.....68

EXAMINING FINANCIAL TECHNOLOGY IN THE
CONTEXT OF ISLAMIC FINANCE
(A QUALITATIVE RESEARCH ON PARTICIPATION BANKS)
İSMAİL KARATAŞ

CHAPTER 6.....89

DETERMINANTS OF DEMAND FOR HEALTH SERVICES:
THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE
NURBAY SEY

CHAPTER 7110
PSYCHOANALYTICAL LEADERSHIP: INTEGRATING THEORY INTO
ORGANIZATIONAL PRACTICES
ÖZGE KOCAKULA

CHAPTER 8.....133
THE ROLE OF MONETARY SUPPLY IN SHAPING INDUSTRIAL
PRODUCTION: A DETAILED ARDL ANALYSIS IN THE
INDIAN CONTEXT
ÖZGÜR ÖZAYDIN, CAN APAYDIN

CHAPTER 9..... 150
UNRAVELING THE MONETARY
POLICY-EMPLOYMENT RELATIONSHIP IN NORWAY:
AN EMPIRICAL ANALYSIS USING ARDL MODELING
ÖZGÜR ÖZAYDIN, ANIL DAĞDEMİR

CHAPTER 10167
HIGH SCHOOL STUDENTS' INSIGHTS INTO READING ALOUD
FOR LANGUAGE LEARNING
RAMAZAN GUZEL

CHAPTER 11187
RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN WORK VALUES INNOVATIVE WORK
BEHAVIOR AND JOB PERFORMANCE
MUHAMMED YUSUF GÖKÇEN, SABAHATTİN ÇETİN

CHAPTER 12..... 203
THE IMPACT OF DIGITAL TRANSFORMATION ON STRATEGIC
MANAGEMENT AND LOGISTIC PERFORMANCE IN BUSINESSES
SELVA STAUB

CHAPTER 13235

RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN SCIENCE AND PHILOSOPHY - EVIDENCE
FROM AVIATION INDUSTRY

*TUĞRUL GÜNAY, TAPDIQ IMANOV,
MEHMET NECATI CIZRELIOĞULLARI*

CHAPTER 14255

ON PSYCHOLOGISM IN PUSHKIN'S "THE MISERLY KNIGHT" AND
HONORÉ DE BALZAC'S "GOBSEK": A COMPARATIVE ASPECT

ALİ AKYAR

CHAPTER 15265

BOUNDARIES OF MULLA AHMAD AL-JAZARĪ'S METAPHYSICS IN THE
CONTEXT OF PHILOSOPHICAL PARADIGMS

HAMDULLAH ARVAS

CHAPTER 1

THE POWER OF THE UNSPOKEN: BECKETT'S MUTE PHASES IN LITERATURE AND ADORNO'S AESTHETIC FRAMEWORK

C. DOĞAN YAŞAT¹

ABSTRACT

This paper will attempt to evaluate the transformation of language from word to muteness as a modernist movement in Beckett's art with respect to Theodor Adorno's aesthetic theory. Beckett's artistic 'research', is based on an attempt to uncover social 'reality'. So, the most crucial question for Beckett is how it could be possible to express the truth which inhabit the external world. In this context, this work will consantrate on the political meaning of Beckett's muteness in regard to the critique of modernity. In Beckett's writing, the end of speech, that is to say, both the object of speech and the falling mute of speech, cannot be separated from the movement of speech itself. Language seems to be the state from which there is no escape. Beckett's continuous writing is a constant refusal to fix or defines muteness only through more writing which destabilizes writing itself.

Keywords: Theodor Adorno, Samuel Beckett, Critical Theory, sociology of literature, the muteness.

INTRODUCTION

This paper endeavors to assess the evolution of language within Beckett's artistic framework, transitioning from the realm of words to a profound silence, within the context of modernist movements and in alignment with Theodor Adorno's aesthetic theory. At the core of Beckett's artistic exploration lies a form of 'research' rooted in the quest to unveil the underlying aspects of social 'reality.' Consequently, the pivotal inquiry for Beckett becomes the means through which one can articulate the truths embedded in the external world. This study aims to delve into the political significance of Beckett's chosen

¹ Assoc. Prof. Dr., Mimar Sinan Fine Arts University, Faculty of Science and Literature, Department of Sociology, Istanbul, dogan.yasat@msgsu.edu.tr, ORCID: <https://orcid.org/0009-0002-3935-831X>
dogan.yasat@msgsu.edu.tr

muteness, emphasizing its connection to the critique of modernity. By investigating Beckett's deliberate linguistic transformations, the paper seeks to unravel the layers of meaning beneath his artistic expression and how it mirrors or challenges prevailing socio-political contexts. Through a thorough exploration of Beckett's work in dialogue with Adorno's aesthetic theory, this research aims to contribute to a nuanced understanding of the intricate relationship between language, silence, and societal critique in the realm of modernist art.

Silence or Muteness

Adorno's critique of modernity essentially foregrounds aesthetic elements of modern art in social and political ground. The aesthetic of silence refers not only an artistic meaning, but also political and ethical meanings as a crucial category of modern art. But the term silence is very debated especially in literature. "We cannot stand in any direct relationship to this silence and therefore constantly risk losing it as we must drown it in noise or simply ignore it. In order to relate to silence a noiseless mediator is needed. And this is the function of literature... Literature enters into a relationship to this raw, immediate silence and mediates it into a silence that we can relate to. Therefore literature safe guard our relationship to silence" (Loevlie, 2004: 27). We may call this form of silence as 'literary silence'. But still the term literary silence sounds paradoxical because of its own nature. That leads us to question whether silence really exists ontologically? Here I would like to give two examples to deal with that question one from philosophy and one from music.

In "*On the Heavens*," Aristotle (2020) counters the Pythagoreans' assertion about the harmony resulting from the celestial bodies' motion, particularly the notion that the sounds they produce are harmonious. Despite the eloquence and ingenuity with which the Pythagorean argument is presented, Aristotle challenges its premise, arguing for the existence of motion in celestial bodies. Pythagoreans suppose that the motion of bodies of that size must produce a noise, since on our earth the motion of bodies far interior in size and in speed of movement has that effect. Also, when the sun and the moon, they say, and all the stars, so great in number and in size, are moving with so rapid a motion, how should they not produce a sound immensely great? Aristotle says that "starting from this argument and from the observation that their speeds, as measured by their distances, are in the same ratios as musical concordances, they assert that the sound given forth by the circular movement of the stars is a harmony. Since, however, it appears unaccountable that we should not hear this music, they explain this by saying that the sound is in our ears from the very

moment of birth and is thus indistinguishable from its contrary silence, since sound and silence are discriminated by mutual contrast. What happens to men, then, is just what happens to coppersmiths, who are so accustomed to the noise of the smithy that it makes no difference to them” (Aristotle, 2020: 59). This dialogue between Aristotle and the Pythagoreans suggests that silence may only possess a secondary existence, challenging the notion that pure silence, in its absolute form, does not truly exist.

The second illustrative example, which intricately complicates the conventional understanding of silence, emerges from the groundbreaking work of the modern composer John Cage, notably in his celebrated composition, 4'33". In this avant-garde piece, a performer takes center stage, assumes a position at a grand piano, lifts the lid, occasionally turns music pages, and otherwise maintains a state of apparent quietude for precisely 4 minutes and 33 seconds. The performance concludes with a bow, marking the departure from the stage. On the surface, one might hastily categorize this composition as a silent piece of art. However, Cage, the architect of this unique auditory experience, challenges the simplistic notion of silence as merely the absence of sound within this context.

Cage's dissent from a straightforward interpretation is underscored by his critical reflection on the initial audience's response to 4'33". In questioning the primary existence of silence in this composition, Cage challenges observers to reconsider their perception of the piece. Far from being a mere void of sound, 4'33" prompts an exploration into the intricate layers of ambient noise, environmental sounds, and the role of subjective experience in shaping our understanding of silence within the realm of musical expression. By extending beyond the traditional boundaries of silence, Cage's artistic intent becomes a profound exploration of the thresholds and subjectivity inherent in the perception of silence in art, encouraging audiences to reflect on the dynamic relationship between sound, absence, and the ever-evolving nature of artistic expression.

“They missed the point. There’s no such thing as silence. What they thought was silence, because they didn’t know how to listen, was full of accidental sounds. You could hear the wind stirring outside during the first movement. During the second, raindrops began patterning the roof, and during the third the people themselves made all kinds of interesting sounds as they talked or walked out” (Cage, 2003: 70).

Beckett's mute phases

In the light of these two examples it seems necessary to find a suitable concept instead of silence for terminology of aesthetics. So the term muteness can be helpful to say unsayable in artistic ground, exactly like Beckett did in his oeuvre. Silence has no potentiality to do that because of its nature, but muteness has. Muteness, which means a refusal to speak when expected, is a free activity of a conscious subject, on the other hand silence must be disappeared after any activity of a subject. Actually silence is not in contradiction with language itself, especially in literature, but it contradicts with the activity of the artist who desires to escape outside language by choosing to be mute. For instance, in Beckett's writing, the end of speech, that is to say, both the object of speech and the falling mute of speech, cannot be separated from the movement of speech itself. Muteness is not an object outside speech. Language seems to be the state from which there is no escape. Beckett's continuous writing is a constant refusal to fix or defines muteness only through more writing which destabilizes writing itself.

The representatives of modern art and literature, including Beckett, considered necessary the purification of language of art. What Beckett did in his writings was to steer for a kind of pure language, namely a language which does not repeat any other myth or lie, unlike the way an ideological language does. Beckett wished to eliminate language, not all at once, but step by step. First of all, he tried to get rid of words in literature. This attempt can be shown in his plays, but Beckett attempted to use muteness in his literary texts, as well. These are generally interpreted as nihilistic moments, but it is possible to present mute moments as productions of a desire to eliminate the impure usage of language in an artwork. The mute moments manifest a distinction between social reality and aesthetic reality.

Adorno in, *Aesthetic Theory*, (Adorno, 1999) points that aesthetic transcendence and disenchantment converge in the moment of falling mute: in Beckett's oeuvre. A language remote from all meaning is not a speaking language and this is its affinity to muteness, according to him. Thus inner aesthetic ground of art and muteness had to be substituted for social reality and its ideological language. This is why Adorno's opinion that Beckett is more realistic than the socialist realists who counterfeit reality by their very principle.

Inner aesthetic ground, especially in literature, produces an alternative reality which is not reflective, but unique. So, Adorno thinks that by appearing as art, that which insists that it is realistic injects meaning into reality, which such art is pledged to copy without illusion. In the face of reality this is a priori ideological and the impossibility of realism is not to be concluded on inner-

aesthetic grounds but equally on the basis of the historical constellation of art and reality. On the other hand, socialist realism and its mimetic point of view has always desired to reflect social reality in literary works. However, a reflective literary language is not competent to present the implications of social reality by avoiding to reproduce its discourse which has been blemished by the language of predominant ideology.

Mimesis and aesthetic ground

Adorno delved into the concept of *mimesis* within three distinct contexts: firstly, within the framework of critiquing the commodity form and its proclivity for reification and deception; secondly, through the lens of Freudian theory, involving processes of identification and projection; and lastly, from an aesthetic standpoint closely aligned with Benjamin's language theory (Adorno, 2005). This aesthetic perspective delves into the interplay of word and image in the development of signifying systems. Overall, these considerations led Adorno to reject the dominant mimetic theory. *Mimesis*, for him, is not an imitation, but assimilation in the aesthetic ground. According to Adorno, the unyielding connection between reality and humanity embodies what endures of the subject, mind (*Geist*), and soul in the midst of an enduring catastrophe. The mind, rooted in *mimesis*, now manifests as mere ludicrous imitation. The soul, in its self-staging, exhibits an inhumane sentimentality. As for the subject, it is reduced to its most abstract determination, tangibly existing and thereby already committing blasphemy (Adorno, 1982).

Mimesis is no longer a purely imitation any more. "In the sphere of art and aesthetics, mimesis is for Adorno both the activity of assimilating the self to the other and the affinity of the work of art to objectivity" (Oppo, 2008: 122). Socialist reality is an assault on freedom, in this sense. Only as an illusion it is possible to reassert the freedom lost in the reification process. And this demands a different language capable of asserting its "sensuous" quality for a subject; it must remain irreducible to either philosophical categories or any set of objective conditions. Therefore, according to Adorno, the language employed by artworks, characterized as "mimetic," serves the crucial function of directly articulating what, within the confines of a reified reality, constitutes the illusion of freedom (Adorno, 1983). Adorno contends that the mimetic quality of artistic expression, far from merely imitating or representing, intricately captures and reflects the very essence of a reality that has become commodified and stripped of genuine autonomy. In this context, the artistic language, by being mimetic, functions as a mirror, offering a profound commentary on the illusory nature of freedom within a society that presents itself as liberated but is, in reality,

entangled in the fetters of commodification and reification. Adorno's emphasis on the mimetic language underscores the artist's role in not only portraying the surface of existence but also in penetrating the layers of illusion to reveal the underlying tension between the semblance of freedom and the stark realities of a reified world.

Here the illusion, in Adorno's aesthetic theory, is a touchstone to constitute a relation between mute moments in art and mimetic language. *Mimesis* alone transforms verbal language into the non-conceptual language of art. The language of art retains its mimetic nature: by so doing it also underlines its affinity with the silence of things. "A crucial paradox of Adorno's theory of art concerns the linguistic character of art, whose greatest aim to give expression to natural beauty, while facing the impossibility of this expression being anything other than speechless and mute, since it is not discursive language" (Oppo, 2008: 122-123).

Beckett's plays² and texts³ are both mimetic and rationally oriented to eliminate the old meanings. They are mimetic with regard to the primacy of the 'secret language of things' and the subjective enactment to this, whereas they are rational with regard to the need to remove all meaning in order to be mimetic. Adorno calls this elimination attempt as annihilation of reality. "This is what Adorno intended when saying that it is *Endgame's* incomprehensibility that has to be comprehended" (Oppo, 2008: 140). In Beckett, *mimesis* is substituted for another technic, that is montage. Montage is the inner-aesthetic capitulation of art to what stands heterogeneously opposed to it. The negation of synthesis becomes a principle of form. As Adorno points "All modern art may be called montage" (Adorno, 1999: 155).

"The surplus of reality, says Adorno, "amounts to its collapse; by striking the subject dead, reality itself becomes deathly; this transition is the artfulness of all antiart, and in Beckett it is pushed to the point of the manifest annihilation of reality" (Adorno, 1992: 32). The more total society becomes, the more completely it contracts to an unanimous system, and all the more do the artworks in which this experience is sedimented become the other of this society. This is not only annihilation of reality, it is the elimination of language to the purest, as well. Adorno notes, new art is as abstract as social relations have in truth become, because the spell of external reality over its subjects and their reactions has become absolute, the artwork can only oppose this spell by

² Samuel Beckett's theatre plays in chronological order: *Waiting for Godot* (1953) *Endgame* (1957), *Krapp's Last Tape* (1958), *Happy Days* (1961), *Play* (1963), *Not I* (1972), *Footfalls* (1976), *Rockaby* (1981), *Ohio Impromptu* (1981), *Catastrophe* (1982), *What Where* (1983).

³ Samuel Beckett's novels in chronological order: *Murphy* (1938), *Watt* (1953) *Malone Dies* (1951), *The Unnamable* (1953), *Molloy* (1951), *How It Is* (1961), *Company* (1980).

assimilating itself to it. At ground zero, however, where Beckett's plays unfold like forces in infinitesimal physics, a second world of images springs forth, both melancholic and opulent, a concentration of historical experiences that, in their immediate nature, otherwise fail to articulate the essential: the evisceration of subject and reality, as posited by Adorno (Adorno, 1999: 31). No wonder than that, what Adorno names ground zero is definitely references muteness of Beckett's artistic language. The Beckettian zero point is not inconceivable that humanity would no longer need a closed, immanent culture once it actually had been realized, however, the threat is a false destruction of culture, a vehicle of barbarism, for Adorno (Adorno, 1999). For instance, the gesture of walking in place at the end of *Godot*, which is the fundamental motif of the whole of his work, reacts precisely to this situation. Without exception his response is violent (Adorno, 1999). This is why Beckett focuses on the failure of man to overcome absurdity in the face of such a catastrophe after Second World War. So, the absurd, for Beckett, is a one of the most important tool to annihilate reality in muteness. The absurd indicates a disharmony between a meaningless world and the desire to make sense of that world.

Adorno implies that Beckett's plays are absurd not because of the absence of any meaning, for then they would be simply irrelevant, but because they put meaning on trial; they unfold its history. This is not simply explained by suspend of judgement, because it is originated from a negative dialectic conception puts negation of negation against any tautology. So Adorno thinks that Beckett's work is ruled as much by an obsession with positive nothingness as by the obsession with a meaninglessness that has developed historically and is thus in a sense merited, though this meritedness in no way allows any positive meaning to be reclaimed (Adorno, 1999). Beckett's artistic language is an immediate response to the crises of meaning both in metaphysics and in art. Inner aesthetic ground is capable of overcoming the crises of meaning by negating the inflexibility of social reality. This is why art is continuously inclined to anti-art in modern era. Adorno says the key to contemporary anti-art, with Beckett at its pinnacle, is perhaps the idea of concretizing this negation, of culling aesthetic meaning from the radical negation of metaphysical meaning. The aesthetic principle of form is in itself, through the synthesis of what is formed, the positing of meaning even when meaning is substantively rejected (Adorno, 1999). The primary objective of Beckett, through the negation of all established patterns of artistic language, is to achieve a literature devoid of words, a pursuit evident in his novels such as '*Murphy*,' (1938), '*Watt*,' (1953), '*Malone Dies*,' (1951), '*The Unnamable*,' (1953), '*Molloy*,' (1951), '*How It Is*,' (1961), and '*Company*' (1980). There is no doubt that Beckett succeeded on that.

Beckett attempted to push literature to its limits and probably after that he took drama himself as a new ground to try exhausting meaning i. e. meaningless meaning in the outer world. Beckett, by doing so, transferred mute moments from literature to drama.

Meaning and muteness

The word ‘meaning’ (*Sinn*) is multivalent, as Adorno observes. First of all, it denotes metaphysical content, which objectively emerges per se from the artifact: then, it is the intention of the whole as a structure of meaning; and finally the sense of the words and sentences spoken by the characters. In short, all that is essential for drama is constituted by this meaning. “If meaning is removed, the totality of the drama collapses but, in doing so, it also shows its real content” (Oppo, 2008: 90). In his insightful article titled “*Trying to Understand Endgame*,” (Adorno, 1982) Adorno presents a compelling argument asserting that drama encounters a fundamental challenge when it endeavors to encapsulate negative meaning or the absence thereof as its central content. According to Adorno, such a thematic choice profoundly influences every distinctive aspect inherent to the dramatic form, almost to the extent of inverting its essential nature. He contends that the very essence of drama is intricately intertwined with the presence of meaning, whether affirmative or negative, and any deviation from this core element results in a transformative impact on the entire dramatic structure. Adorno seems to suggest that the foundational constitution of drama relies heavily on the meaningful interplay of elements, and any attempt to divorce it from this fundamental aspect risks pushing the dramatic form to the brink of a reversal, where its intrinsic qualities may be distorted or even inverted. This nuanced perspective invites a deeper exploration of Adorno's views on the complexities of meaning within the dramatic realm, urging scholars and enthusiasts alike to consider the intricate interplay between content and form in their analyses of dramatic works (Adorno, 1982). He says “history is excluded, because it itself has dehydrated the power of consciousness to think history, the power of remembrance. Drama falls silent and become gesture, frozen amid the dialogues” (Adorno, 1982: 125). Adorno calls this form of muteness as the objective disintegration of language – that simultaneously stereotyped and faulty chatter of self-alienation, where word and sentence melt together in human mouths – penetrates the aesthetic arcanum. In this sense Beckettian muteness by rejecting the language of outer world posits a negative language which can only be constructed in inner aesthetic ground of and art work. In his elucidation, Adorno delves into the intricacies of a language that, in his view, actively negates social reality. He

describes this particular linguistic realm as the "second language" spoken by those who choose the path of silence. This alternative mode of expression, as he depicts it, is a fusion of audacious phrases, pseudo-logical connections, and words reanimated to mimic the characteristics of commodity signs—reminiscent of the bleak reverberations emanating from the advertising world. Adorno employs the term "refunctioned" to encapsulate the transformative process by which this seemingly disparate and often insolent linguistic amalgamation is repurposed into the fabric of a poetic work (Adorno, 1973). This poetic endeavor, in its essence, embodies a radical form of negation, not merely rejecting but actively negating language. Within this conceptual framework, Adorno hints at the profound influence of artistic reappropriation. In this process, dissonant elements from the secondary language find renewed purpose within the realm of poetry, thereby making a distinctive contribution to a more extensive dialogue on the intricate dynamics of expression and negation within the broader cultural and social milieu (Adorno, 1982).

Beckettian muteness or in other words his "mute speech" (Rancière, 2011) which eliminates the language of traditional art and its motifs of narration, becomes more opaque in the sense of the relation between content and form in his drama and literature. Non-symbolic content of Beckett's literary works is constructed on a self-negating form. Adorno notes "In Beckett the negative metaphysical content affects the content along with the form. The work does not, however, thereby become something simply incomprehensible; the well-founded refusal of its author to offer explanations for so-called symbols is faithful to an aesthetic tradition that has elsewhere been dismissed. A relation, not identity, operates between the negativity of the metaphysical content and the eclipsing of the aesthetic content. The metaphysical negation no longer permits an aesthetic form that would itself produce metaphysical affirmation; and yet this negation is nevertheless able to become aesthetic content and determine the form" (Adorno, 1999: 348). The self-annihilating structure evident in many of Beckett's later prose works, along with the pervasive silence characterizing his later theatrical pieces, seems to encapsulate a philosophy of linguistic nihilism. This philosophy rejects not just literary norms but language itself, striving towards a silence that might be its only authentic manifestation.

Many of Beckett's later prose works, characterized by their self-negating structure, and the wordlessness observed in his late theatrical productions, seem to embody a philosophy of linguistic nihilism. This philosophy involves a rejection not only of established literary conventions but of language as a whole, a yearning for the silence that could be its sole genuine expression. The inherent self-negation in Beckett's later prose works, along with the profound

silence in his late theatrical pieces, appears to manifest a philosophy of linguistic nihilism. This philosophy rejects not merely literary norms but language itself, moving towards a silence that could be its only authentic articulation.

This muteness of art is emphasized by Adorno in Samuel Beckett: The genuine expression of the subject's negativity as the authentic embodiment of objectivity can only be conveyed through a radically subjective presentation, rather than seeking refuge in an ostensibly superior reality. The contorted clowns, simultaneously childlike and macabre, into which Beckett dissects the subject, represent the historical truth of that subject; in comparison, socialist realism appears merely simplistic. In *Waiting for Godot*, (Beckett, 2011) the exploration of the dynamics of dominance and subservience, embodied in its senile and lunatic forms, takes center stage during a phase when control over others' labor persists, even though humanity no longer requires it for its self-preservation. This motif, indeed one of the fundamental principles of contemporary society, is further developed in 'Endgame' (Beckett, 2009). In *Endgame*, Beckett explores a tellurian partial catastrophe, arguably the bloodiest manifestation of his clown-like humor. This catastrophe is presupposed both thematically and formally, serving as the force that has obliterated art's essential components and genesis. *Endgame* is not merely a play centered around the atom bomb, nor is it devoid of content. Instead, the determinate negation of its content emerges as its formal guiding principle, representing a complete negation of content altogether. Beckett's body of work provides a disconcerting response to art's vulnerability—suggesting that, through its origins and its detachment from practical application, art, in the face of mortal threat, morphs into ideology through the perceived harmlessness of its pure form, irrespective of its actual content (Adorno, 1999).

Although Beckett's plays can no longer be taken for tragic or comic, they are not therefore, as would suit academic aesthetics, hybrids on the order of tragicomedy. On the contrary, Beckett's plays pass historical judgement over these categories as such, faithful to the historical innervation that there is no more laughing over the classics of comic theater except in a state of renewed barbarism, according to Adorno. "So, in accord with the tendency of modern art to make its own categories thematic through self-reflection, plays like *Godot* and *Endgame* are more the tragic presentation of comedy's fate than they are comic; in the actors' forced laughter, the spectator's joy vanishes" (Adorno, 1999: 340). What governs Beckett's work in this direction is a parodic unity of time, place, and action, coupled with meticulously crafted episodes and a catastrophe that is defined solely by the fact that it never actually occurs. Where

muteness gains a meaning is absolutely this catastrophe which remains to say unassayable. The violence of the unspeakable is mimicked by the timidity to mention it. Beckett keeps it nebulous, because, the name of disaster can only be spoken silently. So, Adorno says “only in the terror of recent events is the terror of the whole ignited, but only there, not in gazing upon ‘origins’” (Adorno, 1982: 126).

While the only truth is negative and there is no other life than the false one, nevertheless non-identical elements are tied to identity in a theatre play or a novel. For instance, the syntactic form of question and answer in Beckett’s dialogues is systematically undermined. In the question, Adorno notes, one can already hear the anticipated answer, which condemns the game of question and answer to empty deception. By virtue of his persistence in the free possibility of language faced with nothingness of content, Beckett deciphers the lie of the question mark: the question, in this game, has become rhetorical. In fact all the notions of language has become rhetorical in an artwork. This is the crucial function of aesthetics. Adorno says “an artwork is, as Beckett wrote, a desecration of silence” (Adorno, 1999: 134).

CONCLUSION

Beckett, often recognized as a pioneer, ventured into uncharted territory by probing the very boundaries of meaninglessness within the realm of art. His distinctiveness lies in his ability to navigate the precarious precipice that separates absolute meaningfulness from the void of meaning within artistic creations. It is within the realm of muteness that Beckett discovers the potential for absolute meaningfulness, contending that a false life is inevitably bound to generate meaning in its deceptive language. In his exploration, Beckett’s moments of silence become emblematic, serving as indicators not only of the existence but also of the likelihood of a path leading away from the falsehoods and myths woven into the fabric of a deceptive life. However, this potential escape comes at a cost – the risk of succumbing to muteness, a symbolic forfeiture of conventional modes of expression. Beckett, through these mute interludes, thus proposes the intriguing notion that the pursuit of genuine meaning necessitates a departure from the deceptive languages of false existence, even if such a departure entails a plunge into the realm of silence. This nuanced exploration beckons contemplation on the interplay between truth, expression, and the sacrifices required to navigate the complexities inherent in the search for genuine meaning within the artistic landscape. Beckett’s mute moments at least indicates the probability of existence for a path to escape from lies and myths of false life at the cost of falling to be mute.

REFERENCES

- Adorno, T.W. (1982). "Trying to Understand Endgame, (trans: Jones, M.T.), *New German Critique; An Interdisciplinary Journal of German Studies*, 26 (Spring-Summer), 119-150.
- Adorno, T. W. (1973). *Negative dialectics*, (trans. Asthon, E.B.), New York: Continuum Press.
- Adorno, T.W. (1983). *Prisms*, (Trans: Weber, S and Weber, S), Massachusetts: The M.I.T. Press
- Adorno, T.W. (1992). *Notes to literature*, Vol-II, (trans. Weber, S.), New York: Nicholsen, Columbia University Press.
- Adorno, T. W. (1999). *Aesthetic theory*, (trans. Kentor, R.H.), Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.
- Adorno, T. W. (2005). *Minima moralia: reflections on a damaged life*, (trans. Jephcott, E.F.N.), London: Verso Publishing.
- Aristotle, (2020). *On the heavens*, (trans. Stocks, J.L.), Independently Published.
- Beckett, S. (1973). *Not I*, London: Faber and Faber Publishing.
- Beckett, S. (1976). *Footfalls*, London: Faber and Faber Publishing.
- Beckett, S. (1979). *The Beckett trilogy: Molloy, malone dies, the unnamable*, London: Pan Books.
- Beckett, S. (1989). *Three plays: Ohio impromptu, catastrophe and what where*, New York: Grove Press.
- Beckett, S. (1994). *Rockaby and other short pieces*, New York: Grove Press.
- Beckett, S. (1996). *Company*, New York: Riverrun Publishing.
- Beckett, S. (2006). *The complete dramatic Works of Samuel Beckett*, London: Faber and Faber Publishing.
- Beckett, S. (2008). *Murphy*, London: Faber and Faber Publishing.
- Beckett, S. (2009). *Watt*, New York: Grove Press.
- Kostelanetz, R. (2003). *Conversing with Cage*, London: Routledge Press.
- Loevlie, E.M. (2004). *Literary silence in Pascal, Rousseau and Beckett*, London: Oxford University Press.
- Oppo, A. (2008). *Philosophical aesthetics and Samuel Beckett*, Bern: Peter Lang AG. International Academic Publishers.
- Rancière, J. (2011). *Mute speech*, (trans. Swenson, J.), New York: Columbia University Press.

CHAPTER 2

AN HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE OF WOMEN MOVEMENT IN EGYPT

DUYGU GÜDEKLİ¹

INTRODUCTION

The beginning of the women's movement in Egypt also marks the beginning of the women's movement in the Arab world. The reinforcement of Western ideas, encountered in the early period with Napoleon's occupation of Egypt, continued under the rule of Mehmet Ali Pasha. The views of men who studied abroad and returned, along with those of women seeking a way out, regarding women's issues, increased the visibility of the women's issue in Egypt. Solving women's social life problems and their integration into social life emerged as a reflection of the modernization movement. In this period, women such as Hüda Sharawi, Safiye Zaghoul, Malak Hifni Nasif, Aisha Taymur, Doria Shafik, Zainab al-Ghazali, Nawal El-Saadawi as well as intellectual men such as Rifaa Rafi al-Tahtawi and Kasım Emin played a vital role in the women's movement. The women's movement, which first started with literary life, later came into the public sphere. This exit was against colonialism primarily around nationalist demands, and after independence, it turned to patriarchy as men did not want to share power. The feminist movement was unable to unite within itself, and its criticism that it is Western and appeals to the upper class has weakened the power of the women's movement. On the other hand, the policies adopted by those who are at the forefront of the country's administration also affected the direction of the women's movement, and feminist thought based on Islam, which gained popularity after the 1970s, deepened the separation between secular feminism and Islamic feminism that existed in the previous periods.

In this study, the last thirty years of the 18th century, which is accepted as the beginning of the women's movement in Egypt, and the women's movement in the first decade of Husni Mubarak rule have been examined in the historical process. Since the post-1990 period requires a separate examination within the axis of Islamic feminism and the Arab Spring process, it was not included in the study.

¹ Öğr. Gör., Akdeniz Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Meslek Yüksekokulu, Büro Yönetimi Bölümü, Antalya, Türkiye.
E-posta: duyugudekli@akdeniz.edu.tr Orcid no: 0000-0003-4871-980X

Late 18th century to early 19th century (1870 to 1919)

The French Revolution ideas were transmitted to the Arab world with Napoleon's temporary invasion of Egypt. The ideas continued to exist in these geographies even after the French forces withdrew from Egypt, and as a result of the reform movements adopted under the rule of Mehmet Ali Pasha (Ay, 2018: 32). Consequently, the West's increasing interaction, missionary schools' opening, and sending students abroad increased nationalist ideas and influenced Western-style thought. When Arab nationalism is looked at from the Egyptian perspective, the discourses of "Islamic modernism" have been followed, and within this framework, it is aimed to be independent of Europe and to take the positive aspects of Europe that will strengthen the Arab world (Somuncuoğlu, 2015: 110). In such a conjuncture, the women's movement in the Middle East emerged intertwined with the nation-state's construction, anti-colonialism, and nationalism. In this period, women's right to education was the main consensus on the women's movement.

Intellectuals such as Rifaa Rafi al-Tahtawi and Kasim Emin, who returned to their country after studying in Europe, emphasized the necessity of educating women in their own countries. Kasim Emin stated that Egyptian women's secondary position stems from the wrong tradition, not Islam. Besides, he argued that the veil prevents women from developing and getting an education and that education and emancipation are mutually exclusive (Kurt, 2017: 328). However, the discourses about education focus on raising good and successful sons to countries rather than the necessity for strengthening women's position (Alkhawaj, 2015: 20-24). Therefore, both the feminist movement's reductionist view of women's education to raising successful men, the criticisms that it belongs to the upper class and that it is Western-oriented, and the separation of secularism-religious devotion brought along conflicts over the direction and purpose of the women's movement in Egypt.

Despite the criticism that the women's movement in Egypt belongs to the upper class, Badran (1988: 12) points out that in the decades before Kasim Emin's book *Tahrir al-mar'a* (Woman's Liberation) was published in 1899, it was seen from the memories of women and the magazines they founded that there was a women's movement. Besides, he argues that feminism is not Western as it is claimed, but rather indigenous, does not belong to a single class, that is, the upper class, and is not revealed by men for women, but that women actually revealed it. It also states that labeling feminism as a form of western imperialism and appropriating it to just one class will diminish its movement and undermine its power. Similarly, Ramdani (2013: 41) stated that middle-class women also turned to literary life to find a way out of their traditional domestic roles and that their

thoughts on women's rights were included in the poems and novels that are described as more traditional literature as well as newspapers and magazines, especially reading. He points out that as the rate of writing increases, middle-class women convey their feminist thoughts through their articles, so the feminist movement is not only reserved for upper-class women. At this point, it is vital that Malak Hifni Nasif, who has an active role in the women's movement, comes from a middle-class family. Nasif started writing articles in the liberal / nationalist-oriented al-Jarida newspaper in 1907, published under Ahmed Lutfi Seyid, the Ummah Party founder and who was close to him with the view that feminism was an essential part of nationalism. In his writings, he has addressed topics such as education, marriage, and polygamy, focusing on the relationship between colonialism and feminism. He emphasized the necessity of examining colonialism not under the European heading but as a separate topic to understand the construction of the indigenous feminist agenda. Besides, Nasif disagrees with Emin about the veil and argued that it does not wholly exclude women from the public sphere.

On the contrary, it allows women to participate in the patriarchal public sphere (Yousef, 2011: 74-80). Like Nasif, Aisha Taymur (1840-1902) demanded women's rights based on religious arguments and opposed Western influence (<https://shodhganga.inflibnet.ac.in:26>). Aisha Taymur, while covering the issues related to the equality of men and women in her councils, primarily focused on access to education, which she sees as the biggest obstacle to this equality. In the light of these thoughts, Taymur focused on the education of women in the literary of Egypt and developed with the influence of nationalism, not only for the sake of women but also for the sake of society, the strengthening, and liberation of Egypt's position against the invaders (Ramdani, 2013: 43).

In Egypt, feminist thought was not limited to literary life but also created a space for itself with political actions in the public sphere. Generally considered the beginning of women's activism in Egypt, the women's march in March 1919, following the exile of nationalist Wafd Party leader Saad Zaghlul by the British, was accepted. However, the origins of the earliest women's activism in Egypt can be identified as far back as 1798, when French forces arrived in the Egyptian territory, particularly in Alexandria, leading to public protests. It can be said that it is based on his actions. On the other hand, women-led the "Rosetta Women's Conference" in 1799, where Egyptian women's domestic roles and French women's roles in the family were discussed. Besides, women took part in protests against increased taxes under Ottoman rule and the resistance against the British bombing of the city in 1882, just before Egypt's British invasion. On the other hand, it is known that women in the royal family also provided aid such as horses,

medical equipment, and money to the total resistance against the British (Kamal, 2016: 7-8).

During this period, the increasing demands for education made women gain awareness about education, and such demands paved the way for organizing for equality in education. One of these organizations is the Woman's Education Association, founded in 1914. This association was established to prevent women from having equal enrollment conditions with men, although they could attend classes at the University of Egypt. While the demands for education were repeated per this association, social welfare-oriented activities were conducted in charities founded and run by upper-middle-class women and financially supported by the Egyptian aristocracy women. With these activities, women have had the opportunity to exist in the public sphere, even if limited, by leaving their private spaces in strict lines. While their roles seem mostly related to others' care and nutrition, they have raised awareness about social problems by making women leave the house. Besides, women developed their managerial skills and negotiation and representation skills by publishing newspapers, running conferences and organizations, and contributing to communication networks among Egyptian women (Kamal, 2016: 8-9).

1919 to 1945

Egypt was occupied by the British in 1882, and the British continued their dominance in Egypt until the official declaration of independence in 1922; and despite the end of the First World War, they did not withdraw from Egypt. Therefore, the Egyptian people embarked on a total struggle for national liberation. The presence of women in this struggle took place in the statement made to the British government by the British High Commissioner in Egypt in 1919 (quoted by Pappé, 2019: 294, in Rizk 1999):

"Among the changes that have taken place in Egypt over the past few years, none is more dramatic than that women from some segments of society have become interested in events outside their immediate surroundings. It is largely due to education and development that will affect the course of education in the future. "

It could be observed that women's " interest in events outside of their environment" indicates the nation's position in the liberation struggle. From the point of view of the women's movement, we observe that women prioritize the nation's liberation, and the structure to be fought by putting the demands for rights and equality in the background has changed from patriarchy to colonialism (Ramdani, 2013: 43). In this period, women gained the opportunity to leave their homes with nationalist rhetoric with the role of "mothers of the nation", and

gained a political role as individuals struggling for independence side by side with men. Those who emphasized the role of women as mothers of the nation adopted the idea that the nation would be saved by educating women and educating future generations, as at the beginning of the women's movement in Egypt, and sometimes drew attention to the etymological and specific connections between the nation (umma) and mother (umm) (Baron, 2005: 36). The 1919 Revolution is significant for the women's movement since it is a revolution in which men and women, nationalism, and feminism are in the same sentence (Ramdani, 2013: 44). Per Badran (1995: 88), "The Egyptian woman entered public life through the most dignified door, the door of the national struggle for freedom and independence, from the moment of the first spark of the 1919 revolution."

During the 1919 revolution, two nationalist women from the aristocratic class, Hüda Sharawi and Safiye Zaghoul (1878-1946) played an active role in the struggle against the British and started a "double struggle" for the equality of women and the liberation of the nation. Sharawi and Zaghoul conducted activities such as organizing demonstrations against the British, boycotting British goods, strengthening strikes and anti-colonial writing, and ensuring that ideas reach more people. Egyptian women participated in nationalist demonstrations in March 1919. This event is also crucial as it is being the first public interaction between nationalists and feminists (Ramdani, 2013: 45). However, as those who participated in these demonstrations and signed a petition as Egyptian women with discourses of independence against the British were mostly elite women, the feminist discourse belongs only to elite women, and it brought along criticisms that it could not be described as "A rehearsal of feminist demands" (Ramdani, 2013: 49).

On January 12, 1920, a group of women participating in the 1919 demonstrations established the Women's Central Committee affiliated with the Wafd Party, and Hüda Sharawi became the president. The wife of the Wafd Party leader, Safiye Zaghoul, did not take part in the Women's Committee, although she had close ties, the people called her the "mother of Egypt" (Badran, 1995: 80). After the Wafd Party leader Saad Zaghoul was arrested and expelled from the country, Hüda Sharawi, the Head of the Wafd Party Women's Central Committee, sent a letter to the British high commissioner and stated that they would protest against the injustice and that they would not be able to silence the people in this way. Then, intensive protests began, such as the boycott of British goods, withdrawal of money from British banks, and British doctors, dentists (Badran, 1995: 83).

The union with men against colonialism for the liberation of the nation and Egypt's independence was shaken after the Women's Committee was not consulted on evaluating the proposed Curzon Plan for Egypt's independence. Hüda Sharawi expressed her sadness and confusion to Saad Zaghloul about it. She said, "whoever represents Egypt's rights and struggles for its emancipation must deny half of this independent nation" (Badran, 1995: 82). The opposition policies of nationalist feminist women, who previously turned against British colonialism's oppression, have now turned to indigenous patriarchal practices, and Hüda Sharawi left the Women's Committee (Badran, 1995: 86-88). Thus, she started to move away from the nationalist politics that early women writers viewed with concern when Hüda Sharawi left the Wafd Party and founded the Egyptian Feminist Union (EFU) in 1923 (Nelson: 2005: 97). With this union's establishment, the Middle Eastern nationalist movement came into contact with Western feminism (Philipp, 1978: 290). EFU focuses on the struggle with Orientalist stereotypes, focusing on voting rights and family law, especially divorce rights (Evelyn & Adedayo, 2014: 154). EFU made the first statement of its feminist program at the International Women's Union Congress in Rome in May 1923. The national and secular aspects of the feminist movement were emphasized, and a signal was sent to both Western feminists and Egyptian patriarchists by referring to the equality of men and women in the pharaonic and early Islamic periods in Egypt and the reasons for the breakdown of this equality (Badran, 1995: 91).

The thirty-two-item demands of women are gathered under three main headings: political, social, and women in the official program of EFU. While the secular aspect of the movement is emphasized, removing the veil was not officially on the agenda. However, despite it, Sharawi took off her veil as political action in Cairo upon her return from Congress (Badran, 1995: 92-94). The effects of this movement were not limited to a narrow elite group, it was accepted as reference information for women's emancipation, and it was reproduced over time and kept up to date (Guindi, 2013: 547). The veil, which was a feminist strategy for the gradual transition to the public sphere, ended, and by the end of the 1930s, the veil largely disappeared (Badran, 1995: 93).

In this period, women's gains in political life did not meet the expectations. Their efforts in the struggle for independence were ignored. They could not find a place for themselves with the established governments. While women's rights were included in the new Egyptian Constitution, political rights could not be obtained. Even though the Constitution regulates that Egyptians are equal, with the election law adopted in the same year, women were not given the right to vote, and women became second-class citizens (Badran, 1995: 86).

One of the rare tangible achievements of women's rights in this period is family life regulations. The feminist movement, which could not get what it wanted in the political sphere, focused on family life and achieved healing gains in raising the age of marriage for girls and boys and extending the child's custody period in favor of women in case of divorce (Ruta, 2012: 52). Another achievement was in education. In 1928 women had equal conditions with men for enrollment at university. In 1933, when the university gave its first female graduates, women started to find a place for themselves in the academic field, and the systematic increase in the number of educated working women led to increased awareness of their rights in the workplace, social change, and mobilization for legal reforms (Kamal, 2016: 10).

Significant development was the establishment of the Muslim Brotherhood Organization in 1928. Muslim Brotherhood is a domestic movement, appealing to the lower ground of society, far from Western discourses, and based on Islamic values and morality (Hafez, 2001: 26). Al-Banna stated that Islam supports men and women's advancement, equality between women and men, and drawing attention to their different social roles. Concerning women in the 30-point reform package; it aims at issues that will ensure the protection of women within the framework of Islamic teachings, teaching what is suitable for women (female students, doctors, teachers, etc.) for dress and behavior, revising the curriculum for girls and separating them from men, the prohibition of being a student in the meantime and being alone in a confined space is a punishable crime (Özdemir, 2013: 40-41). Hasan al-Banna recognized the importance of women's support in spreading the organization's ideas, getting support and recruiting members (Abdel-Latif, 2008: 2-3), and founded "Institute for the Mothers of the Believers" in 1932, which consists of the close women relatives of the Muslim Brotherhood and is described as the Women Division of Muslim Brotherhood. Its aims was to educate women and enable them to teach Islamic values to their children and hence the society. Another aim is to spread the movement among women through charities and medical clinics (Biagini, 2016: 41). While Labiba Ahmed was initially appointed as president, this idea was later abandoned, and this division continued its activities under the administration of the Muslim Brotherhood without a president within itself. It was later tasked with linking female activists with Sheikh Mahmud al-Gohary al-Banna (Abdel-Latif, 2008: 2-3).

During this period, the fragmented structure of the women's movement stood out even more. As the EFU could not appeal to the base, acting from the upper curtain, contacting the lower class in the form of helping the poor, and its members belonged to the upper class and were close to Western ideas, caused the women's movement to break up within itself and a group to turn to pan-Arabist

and regional feminism. EFU started to lose members due to its stricter membership rules and its class-based approach to membership, and members who left here entered into new formations. One of these names was Zainab al-Ghazali, who decided to join the growing Islamist movement and established the Muslim Women's Union in 1936 (Ruta, 2012: 53). Ghazali drew attention to women's role as mothers and teachers to the next generations, arguing that women and men are seen in a unified sense with defined roles in Islam and that the problem of women stems from Western distortions, thus stealing the rights of women. He rejected Banna's invitation to unite with the Muslim Brotherhood (Hafez, 2001: 26-27). In the 1940s, the Muslim Sisters, who were most active in religious education and charity work, were encouraged to establish their organizations. Consequently, the female cadre expanded significantly over the years. As the activities of the Muslim Sisters intensified, the need arose for a structure to regulate this situation. In 1944, a Committee was established to oversee the activities among women's branches. However, during this period, internal leadership disagreements among women in the organization led al-Banna to prohibit female leadership within the Muslim Sisters. Instead, he designated their role as being a part of the Muslim brothers, with a subordinate rather than an equal standing (Tadros, 2017: 96-97). In 1945, the Muslim Brotherhood faced a ban. Ghazali, who had previously rejected the proposal for unification, pledged allegiance to al-Banna and began assisting women who became victims, particularly those whose male relatives had been sentenced to prison (Tamal, 2012: 153).

1945 to 1970

In the aftermath of the Second World War, deficiencies in the country's governance and the economic constraints induced by the war precipitated a radicalization of Egyptian politics. Consequently, a process of change and transformation commenced within the women's movement, extending its impact to various other domains. As a reflection of this change, the women's movement focused not only on social problems or women's education. It was tried to determine strategies that would spread to society's base by setting different goals (Nelson, 2005: 99). Looking at the period from a general perspective, we can note that the women's movement matured and changed its shell by taking lessons from previous periods. According to Nelson (2005: 97), the women's movement in Egypt between 1945 and 1959 was enriched in both the ideological approach, the path followed and the goals set, and the elitist roots were no longer social aid-oriented, and the struggle for women's full participation in decision-making processes was articulating with worries and "proved its adequacy".

During this period, Doria Shafik was one of the vital names in the women's movement, who went on a hunger strike demanding the right to vote for women and founded a new organization at the women's movement. Shortly after Sharawi's death, Shafik stated that she took over her meaning for women and the torch she burned in the struggle for women's rights (Nelson, 1999: 141);

"We are all a part of it. If her inspiration were not her light, our struggle would gradually disappear, the effect of our struggle would be lost. We were in the harem until our leader brought us out of the darkness of the harem. Moreover, here we, pioneers, surrender to the will of God, trust in his holy actions, and follow in his footsteps."

Following these words, Shafik kept her promise that she would continue the struggle for women's rights a few months later, and based on the belief that EFU was inadequate and inefficient with the death of Sharawi, she founded the "Girls of the Nile" organization in 1948. At the press conference, Doria Shafik answered French journalists' question about the meaning of women's emancipation as "...demanding all political rights to women". We can infer that there is a shift from education rights to the provision of political rights that early feminist thought focused on. Besides, Shafik answered that Islam is not an obstacle to the equality of men and women; on the contrary, they are both included in the Qur'an equally to the question asked about the relationship between Islam and feminism (Nelson, 1999: 147). Furthermore, other women's organizations continued their activities during this period. Ghazali continued their Muslim Women's Association activities and continued their activities informally with the Muslim Sisters per their commitment to al-Banna, keeping the two associations under the same roof. Despite the Muslim Brotherhood's dissolution, it enabled the Sisters to continue their activities and support the Islamist movement. Simultaneously, women undertook a connection mission between imprisoned men and the outside world, which enabled women to experience leadership (Biagini 2016: 42).

Considering the political conjuncture of this period, after the Free Officers coup in 1952, it passed under the rule of Nasser, who adopted pan-Arabist Arab nationalism, and in 1953 the Constitution was abolished, and the parliament was closed. Until the new Constitution's proclamation process, feminist organizations continued their work and repeated their demands for votes. However, the reflection of the new era, which started in Egypt in 1952, on women did not occur until 1956, gender discrimination was banned with the constitution adopted in 1956, and women were also given the right to vote. Women were nominated for the election for the first time in 1957, and two out of six female candidates entered the parliament. Besides, a woman, Hikmet Abdu Zayd, became a minister for the first time in 1962 (Ruta, 2012: 55). Between 1956-1979, women gained the right

to vote and became more visible by establishing their businesses in public life, joining the labor force, and entering the parliament and cabinet. While the Egyptian legal system was entirely secular, it continued to comply with religious laws on family, marriage, divorce, custody, alimony, and inheritance, family planning became a national policy applied throughout the country, and birth control methods were distributed free of charge throughout the country (Kamal, 2016: 11). Besides, the women's movement could exist within a single legal organization, the Arab Socialist Union (Sullivan, 1986: 23). During this period, state feminism was practiced in Egypt. Per Hatem (1992: 232), state feminism was interested in women's reproductive and productivity concerns of the state and carried these concerns to the public sphere by removing them from women's private sphere. Therefore, these concerns have transformed into concerns of state and private sector employers. Reproduction and production concerns moved from the private to the public sphere made it easier for women to find a place in education and employment. Despite taking steps to provide economic independence for women that have become dependent on the state in other areas (education, employment, social services, health, and political representation), and a "public patriarchy system " was created (Hatem, 1992: 233). Afraid of all kinds of non-governmental initiatives, the state also tried to suppress the state feminist organizations, the Egyptian Feminist Union was dissolved, the Muslim Women's Association was closed, and Ghazali was imprisoned, the girls of the Nile were also closed, and Doria Shafik was placed under house arrest. Despite all these pressures and prohibitions, feminist thought did not disappear; it continued its activities by going underground (Bekhet, 2014: 34).

1970 to 1980

Enver Sedat, who came to power in 1970 with the end of the Nasser era, followed a neoliberal open-door policy towards the West. These policies brought about women's division economically and weakened women's position except for a limited upper-class segment (Salem, 2018: 255-256). As a reflection of the search for a new alliance in the West to fix the deteriorating economy, the UN Decade for Women in 1975 was supported. In 1979, the Law of the Cihan (Cihan, the name of Enver Sedat's wife) was adopted, which included a series of reforms to improve women's position. Within this law, gender quotas were introduced to represent women in the parliament, and women were allocated 30 seats in the parliament. However, the quota application was later annulled by the Constitutional Court in 1984 because it was unconstitutional (Gamal, 2004: 127). Moreover, such law made remedial arrangements in the family law, paving the way for women to travel without their spouses' permission and file a divorce case

if their husbands wanted to get a second wife. As can be seen, the law does not prohibit more than one marriage simultaneously, only grants a woman the right to divorce if she encounters such a situation (Hatem, 1992: 242).

One of the most striking aspects of this period is the return to the veil. At the beginning of second-wave feminism, the veil was considered as a "concrete symbol of persecution", oppressing Muslim women, imposing on them as a religious necessity without preference for women, and therefore pacifying them. Muslim women, who developed an opinion against this pre-acceptance made by the Western world, were perceived as passive objects that could not have their thoughts and were accused of being the spokesperson of the patriarchal ideology (Lazreg, 2013: 78). While there was no single veiled girl in universities in the 1950s, this figure rose to thirty percent by the 1970s. The western dressing was abandoned, and the hijab was worn during the Arab-Israeli War of 1967 and 1973. Sedat removed the Muslim Brotherhood members who were in prisons to support him in the Israeli War, and the Muslim Brotherhood, who got firmer after this process, started to make propaganda and pressure to return to the veil (Aysel, 2015: 273). However, the only reason to turn to the veil was not limited to the Muslim Brotherhood activities. According to Macleod (1992: 545), this new dressing style was very different from traditional dressing styles from past generations, and in this respect, it is not a reflection of men's wishes or an extension of tradition.

The emerging new dressing style reflects the woman's own decisions, a political message, and a tool to combat hegemony. Besides, Mohammad (2005:67) attributes women's return to the veil on the increasing education rate and women's acceptance by Al-Azhar University in 1961. Women thus gained the power to make religious claims against men by interpreting Islamic texts. Due to the economic crisis that started to be felt with the open door policy implemented, the concerns of students in the middle and lower class urban segment increased, and this anxious group attracted the attention of the Islamists to their side with the claim of developing policies for the solution of their socio-economic problems. Macleod (1992:545) also noted the veil's non-political aspect, focusing on its meaning in the public sphere. According to him, returning to the veil was based on the idea that it will reduce sexual harassment in the street and at work, and the view that the men in the workplace cannot comment on their hair and clothing thanks to the veil and they will respect them. Islamic dress style was presented as a means of comfort and protection of women from harassment by implying their devotion to religion (Hatem, 1992: 234). Lazreg (2013: 78-79) also observes the three aspects of turning to the veil, pointing out the relationship

between the first two and "resistance and empowerment", while the last one expresses a belief-based approach. At this point, the veil has three meanings;

1. A tool that a poor and working-class woman uses to work outside the home without the wrath of her husband or rumors in society,
2. A narrative showing the failure of Middle Eastern states to modernize after colonialism, a tool of legitimacy in protests to challenge the interpretations of sharia,
3. A dress shaped culturally and religiously, in a way, is the "sixth requirement of Islam".

Nawal El-Saadawi, a name who took women out of religion, attracted attention with her bold and objective arguments, unlike her contemporaries during this period. She openly addressed prostitution, incest, female genital mutilation, sexual harassment, and child abuse that were not mentioned before. As a result, she was imprisoned by the Sadat regime (Younis, 2007: 473). El-Saadawi's works not only made significant contributions to the feminist movement but also extended their impact by introducing terminology such as "North" and "South" in lieu of the conventional "First" and "Third" World descriptors. Her work delves into the establishment of neocolonialism in the post-colonial era and explores the intricate relationship between hegemony and power. Within the context of power dynamics, El-Saadawi's writings illuminate the ways in which the manifestations of male power dynamics have profound effects on the feminist movement (Pappe, 2019: 287-288).

1980 to 1990

The state's attitude towards civil society began to loosen in 1981 with President Sadat's assassination and Mubarak's rise to power. It was a period in which many contradictions are experienced. Due to the open door policy, economic dependence on the United States has increased, and the Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Discrimination Against Women (CEDAW) was signed in 1981 by being obliged to adopt a democratic outlook for funding. Besides, the Islamist movement, which gained popularity towards the late 1970s, also came to life in Egypt (Al-Ali, 2002: 76-79), women lost their gains since independence.

Kamal (2016: 11) collected the general framework of the feminist movement in this period under three headings;

1. Establishing women's committees in political parties. These committees focus on the role of the family rather than women's rights and leave the incentives of feminist goals to the background by setting their agendas to fit the agenda of the party,

2. With an emphasis on the role of the media and school curricula in strengthening gender stereotypes, the FGM Task Force (especially in the fields of women's and reproductive health, especially on the termination of female genital mutilation) and Media Monitoring Group,
3. Steps for independent women's groups to come together on women's rights and transform into a legal entity

Although various regulations were made regarding the women's movement in this period, it is observed that these regulations did not provide an in-depth perspective on women's problems. Besides, the dominance of the Islamist opposition affected the women's movement in this period. Pappe (2019, 303-304) reflects this period's feminist antagonism as "strange". She demonstrated that the reason for this strangeness was the voicing of anti-feminist discourses by women. With the initiative of the Islamic opposition, which consolidated its place with the rise of political Islam, women gathered in 1985 to protest the Family Law, which was enacted during Enver Sadat, that enabled women to achieve a good position in all respects. As a result of these initiatives, the law was repealed. Besides, the gender quota in favor of women was canceled in the elections, and Egypt went back 65 years in terms of women's rights.

CONCLUSION

The beginning of the women's movement in Egypt is intertwined with nationalist discourses against the colonial powers. In the early period, educated middle and upper-class women focused on the right to education at the point of claiming rights, especially while addressing women's issues through literature. Men who are educated abroad, Kasım Emin, in particular, emphasized that the main obstacle to the development of women is education. Although Kasım was not the first to initiate these discourses and the women's movement dates back to earlier times, Kasım Emin's discourses have found comprehensive coverage, which we can consider as a reflection of gender roles. Kasım Emin is accepted as the founder of Arab feminism (Öncel, 2016: 52). While the women's movement initially continued with its literary life, it also found a presence in the public sphere with national struggle discourses, and women had the chance to experience public life by organizing protests against colonial powers. Although there was no struggle against patriarchy and women's rights during the years of struggle for independence, women's experience in the public sphere and the ability to organize has been essential in developing the women's movement. With the Women's Committee established under the Wafd Party in 1920, women entered an official political organization. Within this organization, women's main activities focused on education and the economy, especially social assistance.

After the process that started with the British government's boycott, women also opposed the men who did not take their opinion in Egypt's independence talks. It also expressed the emergence of the women's movement under nationalism, and EFU was established in 1923. The field of struggle has now been turned from colonial powers to patriarchy. During the period of 1923-1939, regarded as the initial phase of the feminist movement in Egypt, an examination of EFU's studies and ideas revealed a perspective attributing social issues like poverty, poor health conditions, and illiteracy in the country to the state's negligence and irresponsibility in addressing these matters. The perspective on the issue of women, the discourse, and the goals set have not reached the bottom of the society, but rather from the perspective of upper-class women, so an in-depth view of the situation of women in Egypt could not be displayed (Nelson, 2005: 98). Women's demands for political representation were not met for many years, and they waited until 1956 to gain the right to vote for women.

In the 1930s, religious rules, especially the veil, stood out with feminism, and the process that started with the removal of the veil by EFU leader Sharawi brought the veil to be abandoned. Around 40 years after this process, the veil came to the agenda of feminism, and the discourse of Islamic feminism was born.

Many women who broke with the EFU around the discussions about the continuation of the religious tradition established a new organization for women. Simultaneously, steps were taken to improve relations with women during the Nasser period, strict control was ensured against civil society, organizations were closed, and state feminism started. Besides, in Nasser's period, the women's movement broke away from its social aid-oriented and elitist line, matured with the influence of past experiences, and focused on political issues. The women's movement was influenced by the international conjuncture and the country's administration. As a result of Islamism's influence in the region after the 1970s and Enver Sadat's policies, Islamist women organized outside the existing women's organizations, and the veil re-entered into women's lives. It became even more visible in the 1980s and, under the influence of the Islamic opposition under the Mubarak regime, women lost their gains in voting rights and family life in the late 1980s, which resulted from decades of struggles.

REFERENCES

- Abdel-Latif, O. (2008). In the Shadow of the brothers: The women of the Egyptian Muslim Brotherhood. Washington, DC: Carnegie Endowment for International Peace.
- Al-Ali, N.S. (2002). The Women's movement in Egypt, with selected references to Turkey. UN Civil Society and Social Movements Programme Paper Number 5: [http://www.unrisd.org/80256B3C005BCCF9/\(httpAuxPages\)/9969203536F64607C1256C08004BB140/\\$file/alali.pdf](http://www.unrisd.org/80256B3C005BCCF9/(httpAuxPages)/9969203536F64607C1256C08004BB140/$file/alali.pdf), (erişim tarihi: 11. 11.2022).
- Alkhwaja, A. (2015). Complexity of women's liberation in the era of westernization: Egyptian Islamic and secular feminists in their context. Doctoral thesis. The University of San Francisco.
- Ay, H.U. (2018). Arap birliğini doğuran temel ideoloji üzerine bir değerlendirme: Arap milliyetçiliği. *Ekonomi, Politika ve Finans Araştırmaları Dergisi*, 3(1), 32-49.
- Badran, M. (1988). The feminist vision in the writings of three turn-of-the-century Egyptian women. *British Society For Middle Eastern Studies*, 15 (1/2), 11-20.
- Badran, M. (1995). *Feminists, Islam, and nation: gender and the making of modern Egypt*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Baron, B. (2005). *Egypt as a woman: nationalism, gender, and politics*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Bekhet, A. (2014). *Islamist and secularist women in Egyptian politics: Convergence or divergence?*. Georgia Southern University, Electronic Theses, and Dissertations.
- Biagini, E. (2016). The Egyptian Muslim Sisterhood between violence, activism, and leadership. *Mediterranean Politics*, 22(1), 35-53.
- Ekşi, A. (2015). *Türkiye ve beş kıta da gençler*. Ankara: Nobel Kitabevi.
- Evelyn, Y. H., Adedayo, Y. A. (2014). Entrenched patriarchy, women social movement, and women participation in politics. *American International Journal of Contemporary Research*, 4(7), 149-162.
- Gamal, A. N. (2004). *Egypt: Succession Politics*, in *Arab Elites: Negotiating the Politics of Change* (ed. Volker Perthes), Boulder: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Guindi, F. (2003). Veiling resistance, in *Feminist Postcolonial Theory* (eds R. Lewis ve S. Mills), 586–609, Newyork: Routledge.
- Hafez, S. (2001). The terms of empowerment: Islamic women activists in Egypt. *Cairo Paper in Social Science*, 24(4).

- Hatem, M.F. (1992). Economic and political liberation in Egypt and the demise of state feminism. *International Journal of Middle East Studies*, 24(2), 231-251.
- Kamal, H. (2016). A Century of Egyptian women's demands: the four waves of the Egyptian feminist movement. *Advances in Gender Research*, 21, xv-xvi.
- Kurt, G. (2017). Mısır feminizmi: kasım emin'in tahrîru'l mer'e ve el-mer'etu'l cedîde eserlerine karşılaştırmalı bir bakış. *International Journal of Language Academy*, 5/6, 319-330.
- Lazreg, M. (2013). Poststructuralist theory and women in the Middle East: Going in circles. *Contemporary Arab Affairs*, 6 (1), 74-81.
- MacLeod, A. E..(1992). Hegemonic relations and gender resistance: The new veiling as accommodating protest in Cairo. *Signs*, 17(3), 533-557.
- Mohammad, S. (2005). *Politics of piety: the Islamic revival and the feminist subject*. New Jersey: Princeton University Press.
- Nelson, C. (1999). *Doria Shafik Egyptian feminist: A woman apart*. Florida: University of Press of Florida.
- Nelson, C. (2005). *Pioneering Feminist Anthropology in Egypt: Selected Writings from Cynthia Nelson* (eds. M. Rieker). *Cairo Papers in Social Science*, 28 (2/3). Newyork: American University in Cairo Press.
- Öncel, H. (2016). Kasım Emin'e göre kadının özgürleştirilmesi. *Atatürk Üniversitesi Edebiyat Fakültesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi*, 57, 51-61.
- Özdemir, A. Y. (2013). *From Hasan Al-Banna to Mohammad Morsi; The Political Experience of Muslim Brotherhood in Egypt*. Ortadoğu Teknik Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Ortadoğu Çalışmaları, Yayınlanmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Ankara.
- Pappe, I. (2019). *Modern Ortadoğu: Toplumsal ve kültürel bir tarih*. İstanbul: İletişim.
- Philipp, T. (1978). Feminism and nationalist politics in Egypt, in *women in the Muslim world* (eds. Lois Beck and Nikki Reddie), 277-294, Cambridge: Harvard University Press.
- Ramdani, N. (2013). *Women in the 1919 Egyptian revolution: From feminist awakening to nationalist political activism*. *Journals and Campus Publications*, 14(2), 39-52.
- Ruta, C. (2012). *Gender Politics in transition: Women's political rights after January 25 revolution*. Florida: Disertation.com.
- Salem, S. (2018). On transnational feminist solidarity: The case of angela Davis in Egypt. *Journal of Women in Culture and Society*, 43(2), 245-267.

- Somuncuođlu, E. (2015). Ondokuzuncu yzyılda Nahda Hareketi: Modern Arap dşüncesinin oluřumu, kapsamı ve sınırları. Marmara Őniversitesi Siyasal Bilimler Dergisi, 3(1), 103-120.
- Sullivan, E.L. (1986). Women in Egyptian public life. Newyork: Syracuse University Press.
- Tamal, G. (2012). Historical dictionary of women in The Middle East and North Africa. Plymouth: Scarecrow Press
- Tadros, M. (2017). Does revolutionary politics reconfigure Islamist women's agency organizationally? The case of the Muslim Sisters of the Muslim Brotherhood in Egypt (1928-2013). Feminist Dissert, 2, 85-114.
- Younis, M. (2007). Daughters of the Nile: the evolution of feminism in Egypt. Washington and Lee Journal of Civil Rights and Social Justice, 13(2),463-490.
- Yousef, H. (2011). Malak Hifni Nasif: Negotiations of a feminist agenda between the European and the colonial. Journal of Middle East Women's Studies, 7(1), 70-89.
- https://shodhganga.inflibnet.ac.in/bitstream/10603/205504/6/06_chapter01.pdf,(Eriřim Tarihi: 21. 10. 2022).

CHAPTER 3

THE COMMON COUNTER-TERRORISM POLICY IN EUROPEAN UNION LAW: AN ASSESSMENT OF THE "2020 EU SECURITY UNION STRATEGY" IN ITS THIRD YEAR¹

EDA ÜNAL

Selim KANAT

ABSTRACT

The first step in counter terrorism is to define terrorism. However, there are not any definitions of the terrorism binding the countries legally and internationally. For this reason, international organizations are the most important parts of the counter terrorism. But in this study, the European Union was left aside from the other organizations. One of the reasons for that is the European Union considers counter terrorism inclusively within its common security and defence policy. The other one is, as it has a supranational structure, all the member states must harmonise the policy on countering terrorism of the European Union with their national laws. Moreover, the main starting point of this research is to assess whether the efforts made before 2020 have achieved their goals and to reveal what counter-terrorism efforts have been updated in EU law in the period until 2025. The hypothesis to be tested in the study is that counter-terrorism efforts in EU law are insufficient in the long term. The method used in the hypothesis test is qualitative research method, and the basic texts of EU law have been accessed from official sources. The conclusion is that the EU has brought a range of

¹ This article is also partly adapted from the master's thesis entitled "The Common Foreign and Security Policy of the European Union in the Context of Combating International Terrorism", written by Dr. Eda ÜNAL in 2019 under the supervision of Assoc. Prof. Dr. Selim KANAT.

Dr., Süleyman Demirel Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, AB Çalışmaları Anabilim Dalı Doktora Programı
Dr., Süleyman Demirel University, Institute of Social Sciences, Department of EU Studies, PhD Program
edaunal032@gmail.com, 05457800141

ORCID ID: 0000-0003-1886-2058

Doç. Dr., Süleyman Demirel Üniversitesi, İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi, Uluslararası İlişkiler Anabilim Dalı
Assoc. Prof. Dr., Suleyman Demirel University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department
of International Relations

selimkanat@sdu.edu.tr, 05337720235

ORCID ID: 0000-0003-2663-3757

security threats to its agenda alongside the counter terrorism and needs a simultaneous and comprehensive EU law for countering terrorism.

Key Words: European Union law, international terrorism, security, counter terrorism.

INTRODUCTION

Almost all studies on terrorism emphasize the problem of defining the term. The first and most important difficulty in the fight against international terrorism is the lack of a legally binding definition. It is an indication that although there are many ideas about what the concept of terrorism means, a common point cannot be agreed upon. There are many definitions of terrorism. However, there is not only one binding definition that is accepted in international law. Different definitions of terrorism have only a few common features. These are that terrorism always serves a political purpose, and that terrorism is used to intimidate and terrorize fear in society by harming innocent people (Stapley, 2009: 4). However, terrorism is a subject that is not easy to reconcile and explain because it has an unpredictable, surprising, and horrifying character. This problem, which especially complicates the legal dimension of the fight against international terrorism, has become an area where states and international organizations produce policies since terrorism is increasing day by day and has become much more destructive than in the past. Accordingly, international counter-terrorism efforts are carried out despite legally non-binding definitions.

Within the scope of legal counter terrorism, which is stated as the most needed element in the fight against terrorism, the political dialogues, and strategies of the EU with its 27 member states, which also develops its relations with third countries, are examined and international counter-terrorism efforts in the international system are touched upon. It is seen that the European Union, which has a supranational structure, is making its policy of combating international terrorism more and more comprehensive every day within the scope of integration and deepening efforts. Although the EU was established for economic and Customs Union, it is now both an economic and a political union because of the increasing security concerns in the international system. Also, since its establishment, the EU has wanted to protect its economy, and over time this has fostered a desire for political cooperation among European people and governments. Since the end of the Cold War, the common counter-terrorism struggle has been an increasingly important item on this common security agenda. The gradual abolition of internal borders with the inclusion of Schengen within the borders of the Union, the creation of the Single Market, the increasing number

of members and the integration with its institutionalized structure are also required common security.

In countering terrorism, the EU Security Union Strategy document, which was put on the agenda in 2020 and envisages a five-year period, is about to complete its third year and aims for a new security ecosystem in which several security threats are also associated with terrorism (EU Commission-Press Release, 2020). In this respect, in our study, where we examine works in the EU law before and after 2020. For the period before 2020, the Maastricht Treaty is an important milestone. In particular, the transition to a three-pillar structure and the establishment of the Common Foreign and Security Policy (CFSP) are political integration efforts (Maastricht Treaty, 1993). Another turning point was the abolition of the three-pillar structure with the Lisbon Treaty and the creation of the Common Security and Defence Policy (CSDP) (Lisbon Treaty, 2009). In this respect, the EU's efforts to combat international terrorism should be analysed within the framework of CFSP and CSDP in the pre-2020 period. After 2020, the turning point that will shed light on the common counter-terrorism efforts in EU law is the EU Union Security Strategy document (European Commission, 2020). The document's predictions and activities over a five-year period and its progress at the end of the third year are important in terms of assessing the EU's progress in the fight against terrorism.

At this point, the study will be analysed under three main headings. Under the first heading, it will be emphasized what the common counter-terrorism policy studies are in the European Union law before 2020. In the second heading, the "EU Security Union Strategy", which is a new counter-terrorism strategy document that was put on the agenda as of 2020, and its predictions will be included. In the third and final section, it will be evaluated which stage the EU Security Union Strategy has reached in the third year, whether the expected studies have been realized and this document will achieve its purpose or not.

In this respect, the study will make an important contribution to the discipline of International Relations in terms of EU law, and at the same time, it will be a comprehensive source of information for researchers searching the literature on the fight against international terrorism. In this study, documentary source method, i.e. literature review, has been determined as the main research method. To overcome the lack of up-to-date information in the literature, the basic texts, i.e. the originals of the relevant conventions, treaties, and similar texts, were accessed through library research and literature review. The data obtained were also tested by making comparisons from time to time.

COMMON COUNTER-TERRORISM POLICY IN EUROPEAN UNION LAW BEFORE 2020

When we discipline the pre-2020 common counter-terrorism policy by taking the Maastricht and Lisbon Treaties as the turning points, we can see that until the Maastricht Treaty, EU member states tried to define a common position on foreign policy issues through European Political Cooperation based on this article (Haydar, 2010). The first of the counter-terrorism activities carried out in the process of European Political Cooperation was the TREVI (Terrorism, Radicalism, Extreme, Violence, International) Group, which was established after the PLO (Palestine Liberation Organization) attack on the Munich Olympics in 1972 (Occhipinti, 2003: 31). The TREVI Group, which was established in 1976 by the EU countries, that is, twelve countries with the number of member states at that time, to combat terrorism, was established under the leadership of Germany and the United Kingdom as an intergovernmental counter-terrorism partnership without being included in the Union treaties. In short, it is not a supranational structure. This intergovernmental cooperation group met in groups, with the ministers of justice and home affairs meeting every six months, as well as high-ranking law enforcement officials (Occhipinti, 2003: 32). Although the TREVI Group remains structurally an intergovernmental partnership, its work has been reflected in the EU's counterterrorism policies. The most important indicator of this is that the foundations of Europol, which was established in 1998, were laid in line with the work of the Trevi working groups (Occhipinti, 2003: 33).

Before the CFSP, the EU carried out work that laid the foundations for the areas of freedom, security, and justice. Until 1986, although the EU emphasized the importance of the free movement of persons for the Single Market, it was aware that such a relationship between member states was not sufficient for the security of the EU population (Eur-Lex- Access to EU Law, 2023). Police cooperation was seen as a necessity, especially to prevent risks arising from the abolition of border controls (Kaya, 2009: 57). The Amsterdam and Nice Treaties strengthened the EU's common foreign and security policy.²⁴⁸ International cooperation, the importance of which was emphasized by the EAP, was continued after 1993 to maintain peace, combat terrorism and enhance the EU's security. In addition, the EU established the CFSP with general provisions, principles, and objectives applicable to all EU external relations to further human rights, the rule of law, democratization, and fundamental rights and to maintain international peace (Eur-Lex (a), 2023).

In the context of the CSDP introduced by the Lisbon Treaty, the mechanism of decision-making by qualified majority vote was made more comprehensive

and regulated to be valid for deciding on the Union's positions and actions (Cebeci, 2018: 151-178). It was underlined that the CSDP is an integral part of the common foreign and security policy and that it will increase the Union's operational capacity in military and civilian matters (Official Journal of EU, 2023).

With the Lisbon Treaty, the issue of combating terrorism started to be addressed in more detail within the scope of the CSDP. The fight against terrorism was included in the solidarity clause. The Lisbon Treaty defines terrorist attacks as attacks against the territorial integrity of Member States, democratic institutions, and civil society. Within the framework of this article, it is stated that all EU member states will act together in a spirit of solidarity if any member state is confronted with such a terrorist attack. It is also underlined that the EU will mobilize its full power to combat terrorism with the resources that member states can provide, including military capabilities. If a political official of a member state calls for assistance in the fight against terrorism, the other member states should cooperate among themselves and provide counter-terrorism support to the country requesting assistance (Lisbon Treaty, 2009). Member states that can work in groups within the scope of enhanced cooperation will be much more effective in foreign policy, as the fight against terrorism is considered under the solidarity clause.

According to the Lisbon Treaty, within the scope of preventing and combating terrorism, the EU should carry out security activities at the highest level to prevent organized crime, racism, and xenophobia. This depends on cooperation between police and judicial authorities. Furthermore, when deemed necessary, the judicial decisions of Member States on criminal matters should be brought closer to each other (Lisbon Treaty, Chapter I, Article 61). The Lisbon Treaty established the EU External Action Service or EU External Action Service (EEAS) under the CSDP (Lisbon Treaty, Declaration 13). This service aims to work in cooperation with the diplomatic services of the member states (Lisbon Treaty, Article 13a/3). The EEAS aims to create an international security environment in the fight against terrorism. The EEAS also ensures the continuity of the Union's relations within the scope of neighbourhood policies (European Commission, 2023). It also works to increase the counter-terrorism capacities of third countries through special political dialogues (EEAS, 2023). The work of the EEAS on counterterrorism is given in more detail under the heading EU's Countering International Terrorism Policies in Actions Outside the Union.

According to the records of the EU Council of Ministers, in 2013 the Justice and Home Affairs Council stepped up its work on terrorists and returnees from Syria. In this respect, according to the report prepared by the EU Counter-

Terrorism Coordinator on 28 June 2013, the EU should support Member States in preventing terrorism, exchanging information on identification and travel detection, responding to criminal proceedings, and cooperating with third countries (European Council, 2023). Following this report, the EU met in August 2014 to implement the measures taken against terrorists as soon as possible. In this context, this effort shows how committed the EU is to the measures taken. However, on the same date, the EU Council of Ministers requested the European Parliament to finish its work on the Passenger Name Record (PNR) system by the end of the year. This system, which serves to record the information of travellers, includes general information on travellers, as well as their expenses, baggage information, seat numbers, contact addresses and all other travel information (European Council (a), 2023). In this respect, much more information can be obtained when determining whether passengers traveling within the EU are terrorists or not. While combating terrorism, it is aimed to try non-violent alternative ways of combating terrorism to protect human rights, to cooperate with third countries and to prevent propaganda on the internet (European Council (b), 2023). Preventing migrants from reaching Europe, combating terrorism, and planning for the data protection program. To prevent migrants from reaching Europe, the primary objective is to increase the working capacity of Frontex (the European Border and Coast Guard Agency) cooperation with third countries, and to fight against the crime of smuggling to protect migrants (European Council (c), 2023).

In March 2015, the EU Council of Ministers wanted to define a comprehensive counter-terrorism strategy to ensure peace in Syria and Iraq, also against the threat of Daesh. Therefore, the Commission allocated a budget of 1 billion dollars for 2015-2016 for the reconciliation of different ethnic groups in these regions and the establishment of an environment of peace, supported by diplomacy and political reforms. It also emphasized the importance of a comprehensive and long-term fight to prevent terrorists in Iraq and Syria from crossing into Europe and third countries (Foreign Affairs Council, 2023). In 2017, EU leaders reiterated their commitment to four main topics in the fight against terrorism following the terrorist incidents. These four pillars are combating radicalization, which is spreading rapidly through the internet, preventing violent extremism, preventing the financing of terrorism, and finally, joint use of databases and increased information sharing (European Council (d), 2023).

In April 2017, the EU Council of Ministers adopted a new directive to enhance EU security in the fight against terrorism. The aim of this directive is to increase the traceability of firearms and prevent the conversion of blanks into firearms. At the same time, the directive imposes strict rules on the acquisition of some very

dangerous firearms. This is intended to prevent terrorists from easily acquiring these weapons and converting blanks into firearms (European Council (e), 2023). On the same date, another regulation adopted by the EU Council of Ministers was aimed at increasing the control of borders outside the Schengen borders. This regulation aims to minimize potential risks by ensuring border security control, which is a very important security measure in the fight against terrorism. In addition, the regulation obliges Member States to regularly check their databases for information on persons with the right to free movement, whether they are EU citizens or not. Personal data that can be checked through systems such as the SIS and the International Police Cooperation (Interpol) database provides access to any information that could threaten national security, public health, and public policy (European Council (f), 2023)

In June 2018, the Permanent Representatives Committee of COREPER, on behalf of the EU Council of Ministers, indicated the need for an arrangement to ensure cooperation on justice and home affairs. The proposed arrangements consist of several important elements. The first is to create a European search portal that would enable simultaneous searches using both biographic and biometric data. The second is to provide a common biometric matching service where fingerprints and facial expressions from several different systems can be scanned and compared. Third, to establish a common identity repository of biographic and biometric data of third world citizens. Finally, to create a multi-identity finder system that can check whether biographic data and biometric data match in different systems. Thus, anyone who could pose a terrorist threat could be identified through this comprehensive system (European Council (h), 2023).

In the fight against terrorism, the Directorate-General (DG) Migration and Home Affairs is one of the Directorates-General of the EU Commission, which develops work plans and submits reports on behalf of the EU Commission. DG Migration and Home Affairs has responsibilities for borders and security. Its primary objectives are to prevent terrorism, to fight terrorism and organized crime more effectively through cross-border cooperation, to improve the security controls of the EU's external borders and the competitiveness of Europe's security industry (European Commission (a), 2023). In addition, DG Migration and Home Affairs aims to create a free movement area where the security and fundamental rights of both EU citizens and third country nationals are protected. In doing so, it carries out multi-annual programs (European Commission (b), 2023).

The latest of these is the strategic plan 2016-2020. According to this plan, the DG Migration and Home Affairs has primarily two tasks. The first one is migration and asylum. The DG Migration and Internal Affairs controls legal and irregular migration, integration efforts, admissions and returns. The second task

is to ensure internal security. In the field of internal security, DG Migration and Home Affairs is responsible for combating organized crime and terrorism, cooperating with the police authorities, and managing the EU's external borders. Furthermore, DG Migration and Home Affairs can expand existing laws, create action plans and non-binding documents, if necessary to eliminate implementation gaps, increase cross-border information sharing, fight terrorism, organized crime, and radicalization. In this context, in the period 2015-2020, the European Commission adopted the European Security Agenda in response to security threats affecting the EU, such as terrorism. It also identified gaps in implementation in the fight against terrorism and a roadmap to fill the gaps in implementation. Accordingly, in the fight against radicalization, the EU Radicalization Awareness Network (RAN) Centre of Excellence was established. Efforts have been accelerated to increase the exchange of information between the EU and national law enforcement authorities through tools such as the Schengen Information System, to increase cross-border cooperation through the European Joint Investigation Team and the European Arrest Warrant, and to make criminal law uniform at EU level. The first step towards a uniform criminal code was the criminalization of acts of terrorism and foreign fighters (Avrupa Komisyonu, 2017).

Europol, with the support of the DG Migration and Home Affairs, inaugurated the European Counter-Terrorism Centre (ECTC) for the fight against terrorism. The ECTC aims to increase the capacity of law enforcement authorities in the fight against terrorism, exchange information, cooperate at operational level, fight against foreign terrorist fighters, prevent illicit arms trafficking and terrorist financing. In addition, the ECTC is one of the key EU schemes in the work to prevent radicalization and violent extremism leading to terrorism. DG Migration and Home Affairs spearheaded the establishment of the Internet Referral Unit (IRU) as part of the ECTC to prevent the spread of terrorist propaganda and to combat internet and social media tools that finance terrorism, provide human resources for terrorism and support terrorist acts. Another initiative was the creation of the EU Internet Forum. The aim of the EU Internet Forum is to bring together law enforcement authorities, commercial partners, and civil society to work in cooperation to restrict all means of terrorism that spread through the Internet. One of these efforts is the fight against terrorist financing. It enables the identification of terrorist networks based on terrorists' expenditures to travel, train, and acquire equipment. Financial Intelligence Units (FIU) help identify terrorists' financial transactions and financiers across borders. However, another Action Plan for the prevention of terrorism is the Terrorist Financing Tracking Program (TFTP). The program gives Member States the right to request an

investigation of financial data if there are reasonable suspicions of terrorist acts (European Commission (c), 2023).

The EU wants to contain and prevent terrorist acts in its neighbourhood before they enter and affect the Union. In this respect, a four-pillar EU Counter-Terrorism Strategy was adopted in 2005: prevention, protection, monitoring, and response. Prevention is designed to prevent support for terrorism and prevent the next generation from becoming terrorists. The protection pillar aims to protect citizens and critical structures against attacks. Monitoring is designed to track terrorist plans, travel, contacts, financiers, financing, and materials used, as well as to bring terrorists to justice. Finally, the response chapter aims to minimize the consequences of terrorist attacks and manage the crisis in the best way possible, meeting the needs of those affected (European Commission Migration and Home Affairs, 2023).

With a brief evaluation, it is seen in the studies conducted before 2020 that there is no common definition of terrorism in EU law. Therefore, to ensure a common counter-terrorism response, a strategy is being carried out in the context of CFSP and CSDP within a general security understanding. However, these efforts are not steps that can be successful in the long term. Therefore, updates are constantly being introduced. One of these is the 2020 EU Security Union Strategy, which we examined under the other heading.

2020 EU SECURITY UNION STRATEGY: ITS FORECASTS AND ASSESSMENT

Increasingly complex cross-border security threats, especially in recent years, have necessitated closer security cooperation for the EU. Hence, the EU has adopted a new five-year EU Security Strategy in 2020. The EU Security Union Strategy aims to provide a map of the measures and actions that may be needed for all sectors of society in both the physical and digital worlds. The Strategy is endorsed by the European Parliament and the Council, and builds on the progress achieved before 2020 (European Commission-Press Release, 2023). Therefore, the foundations of this Strategy document were back to 2015 Security Agenda.

The 2015 Security Agenda set out three key security strategies. Accordingly, over five years, this framework for working better and more closely together was expected to respond to all major future threats. Taking into account the terrorist attacks in Paris, Copenhagen and Brussels, the EU included counter-terrorism and preventing extremism in its first core security strategy. In this respect, the EU emphasized a strong response to foreign terrorists, noting that conflicts outside its borders threatened its internal security. The second security strategy focused on the fight against organized crime. The importance of cross-border cooperation

in the fight against serious and organized crime was emphasized. From migrant smuggling to arms trafficking, all organized crime feeds terrorism. The third and final security strategy is the fight against cybercrime. It was stated that as trade and banking shifts online, cybercrime is on the rise and that anonymous payment mechanisms for illegal online transactions facilitate drug or arms trafficking, criminal transactions, and money laundering. It is feared that these crimes will increase every year and cyber terrorism will reach an alarming level. It called for effective and coordinated work on emergency action plans for terrorism, organized crime, and cybercrime. (European Commission, 2015).

Accordingly, the EU considers it a priority to ensure the security of the citizens of the Member States living within the borders of the Union in all areas. To this end, it prioritizes the fight against terrorism, combating organized crime, detecting, and preventing hybrid threats, enhancing the resilience of critical infrastructures, and promoting and ensuring cybersecurity in physical and digital environments in the period up to 2025 (European Commission-Press Release, 2023).

This new strategy, which aims to protect all citizens of the Union as stated in the EU Commission's Political Guidelines, underlines that security has now expanded beyond borders to include issues such as climate change and political instability. While globalization, free movement and digital transformation have made lives easier, they have also brought with them risks and costs. It was noted that terrorism, drug trafficking, human trafficking and organized crime affect the lives of all European Union citizens, while cyber-attacks are on the rise. In addition, it was stated that security threats are complex, cross-border and interconnected, with hybrid threats occurring both inside and outside the EU. In addition to all these threats, the Covid-19 pandemic is evidence that security is reshaping, and strategic measures are needed. This is why the EU Security Union Strategy of 2020, which was laid down in the 2015 Security Agenda, has been put into practice. In this new document, the number of strategies identified has been increased to four strategic priorities. These four strategic priorities are as follows: A future-proof security environment, countering emerging threats, protecting Europeans from terrorism and organized crime, and ensuring a strong European security ecosystem (European Commission (a), 2020).

If we analyse these four strategies separately: (European Commission-Press Release, 2023).

The future-proof security environment strategy is the EU's strategy for strengthening and protecting critical infrastructures in the physical and digital environment, addressing attacks that catch individuals unprepared online and offline. With recent terrorist attacks taking place in public and accessible spaces

such as places of worship and transportation hubs, the EU Commission wants to encourage public-private partnerships to better protect public spaces. To this end, the EU Commission aims to improve the basic cybersecurity legislation, namely the Network and Information Systems Directive, to respond to the latest evolving attacks. The need for a Joint Cyber Unit has also been identified.

In its strategy to countering emerging threats, against cybercriminals who use emerging technologies for their own purposes, the EU Commission will ensure that existing EU rules are applied and take measures against identity theft. It will examine measures to increase the capacity of law enforcement agencies in digital investigations. These measures will make use of artificial intelligence. Fundamental human rights will be prioritized in the fight against terrorism. Enhancing the EU's resilience should be a key element of the Security Union Strategy, as well as tackling hybrid threats that aim to undermine social cohesion and undermine trust in institutions. It aims for a broad policy of early detection, analysis, awareness, resilience building, crisis response and countering hybrid threats. In this respect, the EU Commission and the High Representative will cooperate closely with NATO and the G7 countries.

The strategy to protect Europeans from terrorism and organized crime aims to prevent the polarization of society and to keep people strong and free from discrimination and radical rhetoric. It emphasizes the need to take steps to effectively prosecute terrorists and to strengthen border security legislation to achieve this. It emphasizes that non-EU countries and international cooperation are keys to preventing terrorist financing. In addition, the European Commission wants to put forward a new EU Action Plan with this strategy.

In its strategy to ensuring a strong European security ecosystem, the EU is promoting cooperation and information sharing, recognizing that everyone has a responsibility for enhancing security. Key measures include strengthening the competences of Europol and further developing Eurojust to better link judicial and law enforcement authorities. Increased work with Interpol is targeted. The EU Commission wants to create a European Innovation centre. It will help society to protect itself and increase resilience against cybercrime and attacks, even with the slightest knowledge. Therefore, a European Skills Agenda is planned for 2020 for increased awareness and skills.

THE ASSESSMENT OF THE "2020 EU SECURITY UNION STRATEGY" IN ITS THIRD YEAR

As the third year of the planned five-year period of the four main strategies set out in the 2020 EU Security Strategy comes to an end, we can say that the EU has sharply put its own security in focus by testing the resilience of Europe's

critical infrastructure, crisis preparedness and crisis management systems during the coronavirus crisis.

On March 13 in 2020, the Council of the EU updated the terrorist list, which was first established in the aftermath of the terrorist attacks of September 11 in 2001, as an implementation of UNSC Resolution 1373/2001. With this list of individuals, groups and entities, accounts and other financial resources in the EU were suspended. It was decided to review the list at regular intervals, at least every six months, based on a regular exchange of information between Member States on any new facts and developments related to the lists (European Council, 2020: Council Regulation (EC) No 2580/2001).

On December 10 in 2020, the Council and the European Parliament adopted an interim draft regulation introducing new rules on terrorist content online. Accordingly, authorities in member states will have the power to authorize the removal of terrorist content and to remove and block access to terrorist content from internet platforms. The time limit for doing so is set at one hour (European Council-Press release, 2020).

On December 14, 2020, the Council decided to strengthen security in the European Union. To this end, the Council adopted decisions on internal security and the European police partnership. This work sets out the way forward in different areas, including the fight against terrorism and violent extremism (Council of Europe, 2020: 13083/1/20).

On March 16, 2021, the Council adopted new rules on terrorist content on the internet. Voluntary cooperation with hosting service providers will continue, but the legislation will provide additional tools for Member States to ensure the swift removal of terrorist content when necessary. The legislation also provides for a clear and uniform definition of the scope of terrorist content to ensure full respect for fundamental rights. It also includes effective remedies for both users whose content has been removed and service providers to lodge complaints, although the new rules are due to enter into force in 2022 (Council of European Union, 2021: 14308/1/20)

On September 29, 2022, the EU counter-terrorism action plan for Afghanistan was defined. The plan identifies 23 areas for action to anticipate and address potential terrorism risks to EU internal security arising from the Taliban's seizure of power in Afghanistan. The recommendations are divided into four areas. These are security controls and prevention of infiltration, strategic intelligence and foresight, monitoring and countering propaganda and mobilization, combating organized crime as a source of financing for terrorism (Council of European Union, 2021: 12315/21).

On 30 May 2022, the EU updated its terrorist list and decided to impose sanctions on one group and two individuals. The Council decided to add one group and two individuals to the list of those subject to restrictive measures against ISIL/Da'esh and Al-Qaeda and their associated individuals, groups, undertakings, and entities. The measures were directed against the Syria-based al-Qaeda-linked group Hurras al-Din, its leader Faruq al-Suri and its religious leader Sami al-Aridi. With these new measures, travel bans, and asset freezes were imposed on ten individuals and asset freezes were imposed on three groups. In addition, EU individuals and entities are prohibited from providing funds or economic resources to the listed individuals and groups (Council of European Union, 2022: 2022/836 Regulation).

On June 9, 2022, the Council adopted the position on the exchange of information in terrorism cases. To speed up the fight against cross-border crime, the Council adopted a negotiating mandate on a proposal on the exchange of digital information in terrorism cases. This provides for registration in the European judicial counterterrorism register in order to cross-check the information with other European countries, while sharing information with Eurojust. This work therefore aims to address the shortcomings and enable Eurojust to play a stronger and more proactive role in supporting coordination and cooperation between national authorities investigating and prosecuting terrorist offenses (Council of European Union, 2022: 9166/22).

On the same date, the Council adopted conclusions on achievements and next steps in protecting Europeans from terrorism. The Council called on Member States to share information on foreign terrorists and to impose entry bans on third-country nationals who pose a threat to national security. The Council also encouraged greater cooperation between counter-terrorism authorities and authorities responsible for granting residence rights and asked Member States to explore ways to limit the means of action of those promoting radicalization (Council of European Union, 2022: 9997/22).

On December 7, 2022, the Council adopted the Directive on new rules on money laundering. With this Directive, the EU aims to extend the new rules on anti-money laundering and combating the financing of terrorism to the entire crypto sector and requires all crypto asset service providers to conduct due diligence on their clients. This means that all service providers will have to verify facts and information about their clients (Council of European Union, 2022: 15517/22).

On 14 December 2022, the Czech Presidency of the Council and the European Parliament concluded a provisional agreement on a regulation on the digital exchange of information in terrorism cases. This draft regulation is part of

ongoing efforts to modernize and digitalize cross-border judicial cooperation. Currently, Member States share information on terrorism-related cases with Eurojust through various channels. This information is then included in the European counter-terrorism judicial register, which is technically outdated and does not allow for proper cross-checking of information. The proposal aims to address these shortcomings and to enable Eurojust to play a stronger and more proactive role in supporting coordination and cooperation between national authorities investigating and prosecuting terrorism offenses (Council of European Union-Press Release, 2022)

In 2023, on February 24, the EU updated its terror list. The latest list includes 13 individuals, 21 groups and organizations. The Council renewed the so-called EU terrorist list, which identifies individuals, groups and organizations subject to restrictive measures to combat terrorism, every six months, freezing terrorists' funds and other financial assets in the EU and prohibiting EU operators from providing funds and economic resources to them (Council of European Union-Press Release, 2023).

On 8 December 2023, the Council decided to add new names to the terrorist list as part of the European Union's response to the threat posed by Hamas and its brutal and indiscriminate terrorist attacks in Israel on 7 October 2023. The inclusion of Mohammed Deif, the general commander of Hamas' military wing, and Marwan Issa, the deputy commander of Hamas' military wing, followed the decision to freeze their funds and other financial assets in EU Member States (Council of European Union, 2023: CFSP 2023/2764).

CONCLUSION

While designing the study in which we examined the counter-terrorism strategy in European Union law, we first took the date of the last 5-year EU Security Union Strategy as a basis. We examined the studies carried out by the EU before this five-year strategy prepared in 2020. We can say that the studies carried out until 2020 brought new and hybrid threats such as increasing the security of the borders of the Union, preventing radicalization, preventing the financing of terrorism, combating irregular migration and other new and hybrid threats to the agenda. However, in the long term, these efforts have not contributed to the EU's fight against terrorism and require constant updating. However, in our study, in which we stated that the success in the counterterrorism fight is the establishment of a binding definition of the concept, we did not find a common definition of terrorism in EU law.

The 2020 EU Security Union Strategy is also an updated version of a study. Accordingly, the new security strategy, in which the strategies of the 2015

Security Agenda were updated, and new objectives were added, is based on four main objectives.

At the end of the third year of this strategy, which was planned for five years, the strategy we are examining is working in line with the four main objectives. However, it seems that adding names to the list of terrorist individuals, groups and organizations every six months and revising the work being carried out does not go beyond creating a chain of directives and decisions in EU law.

While the European Union adds a new one to its efforts to combat terrorism every day, it is also working to combat hybrid threats emerging with technology and new opportunities. In this respect, the first issue that draws attention during the study is that the developments in EU law closely follow the agenda. At this point, in our research, which we started with the hypothesis that counter-terrorism efforts in EU law are insufficient in the long term, we see that the actions taken are short-term, constantly updated, and insufficient.

In the coming periods, within the framework of European Union law, at the level of supranational law but with the technique of international law, a new five-year strategy policy is likely to be developed. Strategy items are likely to be increased. And the EU will aim to obtain more sustainable results and develop a more effective counter-terrorism policy.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Avrupa Komisyonu, (2017). “*Güvenlik üzerine bir Avrupa Gündemi, Son Durumu: Nisan 2017*”, https://www.avrupa.info.tr/sites/default/files/2017-04/20170412_a_european_agenda_on_security_-_state_of_play_april_2017_TR.pdf (Access Date: 10.12.2023)
- Cebeci, M. (2018). “AB’nin Güvenlik ve Savunma Politikalarında Güncel Tartışmalar”, **Hukuki, Siyasi ve İktisadi Yönleriyle Avrupa Bütünleşmesinde Son Gelişmeler ve Türkiye – AB İlişkileri**, No: 615, (Der. Sanem Baykal et. all), Ankara Üniversitesi Basımevi, ANKARA, 2018, ss. 151-178.
- Council of European Union, (2020). 13083/1/20 <https://data.consilium.europa.eu/doc/document/ST-13083-2020-REV-1/en/pdf> (Access Date: 15.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2021). 14308/1/20. <https://data.consilium.europa.eu/doc/document/ST-14308-2020-REV-1/en/pdf> (Access Date: 16.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2021). 12315/21. https://www.consilium.europa.eu/media/52758/st_12315_2021_init_en.pdf (Access Date: 16.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2022). 2022/836 Regulation, <https://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=OJ:L:2022:147I:FULL> (Access Date: 16.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2022). 9166/22 <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2022/06/09/judicial-cooperation-council-adopts-negotiating-mandate-two-proposals-improve-information-exchange/> (Access Date: 15.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2022). 9997/22 <https://data.consilium.europa.eu/doc/document/ST-9997-2022-INIT/x/pdf> (Access Date: 16.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2022). 15517/22 <https://data.consilium.europa.eu/doc/document/ST-15517-2022-INIT/en/pdf> (Access Date: 15.12.2023)
- Council of European Union -Press Release, (2022). “Council Presidency and European Parliament Reach Provisional Agreement to Improve Information Exchange in Terrorism Cases”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2022/12/14/council-presidency-and-european-parliament->

- [reach-provisional-agreement-to-improve-information-exchange-in-terrorism-cases/](#) (Access Date: 16.12.2023)
- Council of European Union-Press Release, (2023). <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2023/02/24/sanctions-targeting-terrorism-council-renews-eu-terrorist-list/> “Sanctions Targeting Terrorism: Council Renews EU terrorist List” (Access Date: 17.12.2023)
- Council of European Union, (2023). CFSP 2023/2764 https://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=OJ:L_202302764 (Access Date: 15.12.2023)
- EEAS, (2023) “*Counter –Terrorism*”, [eeas_european_external_action_service_-_counter-terrorism_-_2017-07-24.pdf](#) (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- Efe, H. (2010) “*Soğuk Savaş Döneminde Avrupa’da Ortak Dış Politika Oluşturma Çabaları*”, **Ankara Avrupa Çalışmaları Dergisi**, Cilt: 9, No: 1, (Access Date: 10.12.2023)
- Eur-Lex – Access To EU Law, (2023). “*The Gradual Establishment of an Area of Freedom, Security and Justice*”, <https://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/HTML/?uri=LEGISSUM:a11000&from=EN> (Access Date: 09.12.2023)
- Eur-Lex (a), (2023). “*Common Foreign and Security Policy*”, https://eur-lex.europa.eu/summary/glossary/foreign_security_policy.html (Access Date: 09.12.2023)
- European Commission, (2015). “The European Agenda on Security”, Communication from the Commission to the European Parliament, the Council, the European Economic and Social Committee and the Committee of the Regions, Strasbourg, <https://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/PDF/?uri=CELEX:52015DC0185> (Access Date: 14.12.2023)
- European Commission (a), (2020). “The EU Security Union Strategy”, Communication from the Commission to the European Parliament, the Council, the European Economic and Social Committee and the Committee of the Regions, Brussels, <https://eur-lex.europa.eu/legal-content/EN/TXT/?qid=1596452256370&uri=CELEX:52020DC0605> Access Date: 15.12.2023)
- European Commission (a), (2023). “*About the European External Action Service (EEAS)*”, <https://eeas.europa.eu/headquarters/headquarters->

- homepage/82/about-european-external-action-service- eeas_en (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Commission (b), (2023). “DG Migration and Home Affairs”, **Strategic Plan 2016-2020**, https://ec.europa.eu/info/sites/info/files/strategic-plan-2016-2020-dg-home_may2016_en.pdf (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Commission (c), (2023). “Borders and Security”, https://ec.europa.eu/info/topics/borders-and-security_en (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Commission, (2020). “EU Security Union Strategy”, EUR-Lex - 52020DC0605 - EN - EUR-Lex (europa.eu) (Access Date: 13.12.2023)
- European Commission, (2023). “*EU Counter – Terrorism Strategy*”, https://ec.europa.eu/home-affairs/what-we-do/policies/crisis-and-terrorism_en (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Commission, (2023), “*Migration and Home Affairs*”, https://ec.europa.eu/home-affairs/what-we-do_en (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Commission-Press Release, (2020). “EU Security Union Strategy: Connecting the Dots in A New Security Ecosystem”, https://Ec.Europa.Eu/Commission/Presscorner/Detail/En/Ip_20_1379 (Access Date: 09.12.2023)
- European Commission-Press Release, (2023) “EU Security Union Strategy: Connecting the Dots in a New Security System”, https://ec.europa.eu/commission/presscorner/detail/en/ip_20_1379 (Access Date: 11.12.2023)
- European Council (f), (2023). “*Schengen borders code: Council adopts regulation to reinforce checks at external borders*”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2017/03/07/regulation-reinforce-checks-external-borders/> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Council, (2023). “*Timeline: foreign terrorist fighters and recent terrorist attacks in Europe*”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/policies/fight-against-terrorism/foreign-fighters/history-foreign-fighters/> (Access Date: 09.12.2023)
- European Council (a) (2023). “*Council adopts EU Passenger Name Record (PNR) directive*”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2016/04/21/council-adopts-eu-pnr-directive/> (Access Date: 09.12.2023)

- European Council (b), (2023), “*Outline of the counter- terrorism strategy for Syria and Iraq, with particular focus on foreign fighters*”, <http://data.consilium.europa.eu/doc/document/ST-5369-2015-INIT/en/pdf> (Access Date: 09.12.2023)
- European Council, (h), (2023). “*Improving security through information sharing: Council agrees negotiating mandate on interoperability*”,<https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2018/06/14/improving-security-through-information-sharing-council-agrees-negotiating-mandate-on-interoperability/> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Council, (2020). Council Regulation (EC) No 2580/2001 <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2020/01/13/eu-renews-its-terrorist-list-of-persons-and-organisations-subject-to-sanctions/> (Access Date: 14.12.2023)
- European Council, (d), (2023). “*Security and Defence*”, 22-23/06/2017, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/meetings/european-council/2017/06/22-23/> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Council (e), “EU Strengthens control of the acquisition and possession of firearms”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-release/2017/04/25/controlacquisitionpossession-weapons/> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- European Council-Press release, (2020). “Terrorist Content Online: Council Presidency and European Parliament Reach Provisional Agreement”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2020/12/10/terrorist-content-online-council-presidency-and-european-parliament-reach-provisional-agreement/> (Access Date: 14.12.2023)
- European Council (c), (2023). “*Justice And Home Affairs Council, 12-13/03/2015*”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/meetings/jha/2015/03/12-13/> (Access Date: 09.12.2023)
- European Council (f), (2023). “*EU Strengthens Rules To Prevent New Forms Of Terrorism*”, <https://www.consilium.europa.eu/en/press/press-releases/2017/03/07/rules-to-prevent-new-forms-of-terrorism/> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- Foreign Affairs Council, (2023). “*Council Conclusions on the EU Regional Strategy for Syria and Iraq as well as the Da’esh Threat*”,

- <http://data.consilium.europa.eu/doc/document/ST-9105-2016-INIT/en/pdf> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- Kaya, S., (2009), “*Uluslararası Alanda Polisiye İşbirliğinin Gelişimi: Avrupa Örneği*”, **Uludağ Üniversitesi İktisadi Ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi**, C.XXVII, S.1, S.57.
- Lisbon Treaty, (2009). Title VI, Article 188r, <https://Eur-Lex.Europa.Eu/Legal-Content/En/Txt/?Uri=Celex%3a12007l%2ftxt> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- Lisbon Treaty, (2009). Eur-Lex.Europa.Eu/Legal-Content/En/Txt/Pdf/?Uri=Oj:C:2007:306:Full (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- Maastricht Treaty, (1993). https://Europa.Eu/European-Union/Law/Treaties_En (Access Date: 10.12.2023)
- Occhipinti, John D., (2003). **The Politics Of Eu Police Cooperation: Toward A European Fbi?**, Lynne Rienner Publishers, London, S. 31.
- Official Journal of EU (a), (2023). “*Agreement Between The Eu And Usa On The Processing And Transfer Of Financial Messaging Data From The Eu To Usa For The Purposes Of The Terrorist Finance Tracking Program*”, Article I.
- Official Journal of EU, (2023). “*The Common Security And Defence Policy*”, **Treaty Of Lisbon Amending The Treaty On European Union And To The Treaty Establishing The European Community**, Section 2, Article 49/A- <https://Eur-Lex.Europa.Eu/Eli/Treaty/Lis/Sign> (Access Date: 12.12.2023)
- Stapley, C. (2009). “*Understanding the Nature of Terrorism- How Do We Define Terrorism?*”, **Terrorism’s Unanswered Questions**, (Ed. B. Adam, Lowther – Beverly, Lindsay), British Library Cataloguing In Publication Data, United States Of America, P. 4.

CHAPTER 4

DIRECT DEMOCRACY IN THE CONTEXT OF PARTICIPATORY GOVERNMENT: IS IT POSSIBLE TODAY?

İBRAHİM HALİL GÜZEL¹

ABSTRACT

Since the beginning of the 20th century, significant changes and transformations have occurred in public administration and various other domains. Particularly since the late 1970s, noteworthy developments have emerged in the relationships between administrators and the governed within public administration. The understanding of democracy, which had previously been limited to election voting, is now gradually being replaced by practices of participatory democracy. The issue of representation in representative democracy stands at the forefront of these discussions. Participatory democracy, collaborative management, and collective decision-making are crucial aspects addressed in this ongoing transformation. Individuals who were once in a passive role regarding the state are now becoming active participants in the governance process.

This study initially delves into the concept and evolution of democracy. The primary focus is on exploring whether technological advancements can serve as tools in the implementation of direct democracy. Specifically, in the context of participatory management practices, the study considers the significant role that technological developments play in shaping these Dynamics.

INTRODUCTION

The establishment of a democratic social order stands as a primary objective for nearly all countries. Similar to many concepts in the social sciences, a universally agreed-upon definition of democracy remains elusive. Brief definitions include the administration by the people, the management of the majority, and the governance by the people. The historical process has significantly influenced the evolution of democracy to its current state. Ancient Greece, often considered the first example of democracy, saw the development

¹ Dr. Öğr. Üyesi: Siirt Üniversitesi, İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi, Siyaset Bilimi ve Kamu Yönetimi Bölümü, ibrahimhalil.guzel@siirt.edu.tr,
ORCID No: 0000-0003-2671-7635

of a self-governing system in Athenian democracy, marking the initial instances of direct democracy. However, in subsequent centuries, democracy evolved from direct democracy to representative democracy.

The 20th century, in particular, played a pivotal role in the global spread and acceptance of democracy. The shift from direct democracy to representative democracy sparked new debates on the concept of democracy, with problems in representative democracy constituting the central point of these discussions. In a democratic system where sovereignty lies in the hands of the people, this authority is sometimes directly exercised by the people and at other times through representatives of their own choosing. This dichotomy gave rise to two different models of democracy: direct and representative.

In direct democracy, individuals directly exercise their sovereignty. The origins of direct democracy can be traced back to the city-states of Ancient Greece, where citizens participated directly in government affairs without intermediaries. Direct democracy boasts several advantages over representative democracy, including people making decisions themselves, engaging in direct discussions about problems, and participating without the need for representatives.

Today, however, implementing direct democracy is technically challenging, especially in crowded settlements and cities with populations exceeding hundreds of thousands or millions. Nevertheless, developments in technology and communication, along with the emergence of e-democracy and participatory practices, serve as crucial tools for facilitating direct democracy.

1. THE CONCEPT OF DEMOCRACY AND ITS CHARACTERISTICS

Throughout history, it is evident that people have been engaged in a relationship directed by rulership. Consequently, various forms of governance have emerged from the past to the present, one of which is democracy, dating back approximately 2,500 years.

In Latin, democracy derives from the words "demos" and "kratos," meaning the power of the people. Democracy is literally expressed as the people's power. Herodotus, for the first time, defined democracy around 484 B.C. to 425 B.C. referring to it as "public administration," involving "the presentation of all problems for discussion," and the "accountability of managers to the authorities." Different definitions of democracy have been proposed, highlighting its diverse interpretations (Kıslalı, 1998).

Aristotle, in his work titled "Politics," lists the distinguishing features of democracy, using Athens as an example. According to Aristotle, freedom forms

the basis of democracy, aiming for everyone to live as they wish. Aristotle outlines the characteristics of democracy as follows:

- All citizens should have the ability to hold any public office.
- Every individual can manage everyone.
- Everyone can take on tasks not requiring specific experience or training.
- Wealth should not be a prerequisite for any public office.
- A person should not be appointed to the same position twice in a row, with exceptions.
- All assignments must be short-term (usually one year).
- There must be courts with members elected by citizens.
- The popular assembly must hold dominant power.
- Those working in legislative, executive, judicial bodies, and bureaucracy must receive payment (Aristotle, 1983).

Various works aimed at establishing democratic criteria have proposed different definitions. Robert Dahl, in "On Democracy" (2010), presents five standards, including active participation, voting equality, the ability to obtain information, control of the agenda, and the involvement of adults.

- Active participation: All members should have equal and effective opportunities to express their views on proposed policies before adoption.
- Voting equality: Every member should have an equal and effective right to vote, and all votes should be counted equally.
- Ability to obtain information: Every member should have an equal and effective opportunity to acquire information about relevant alternative policies and their likely consequences.
- Control of the agenda: Members should have the right to decide which items are placed on the agenda, allowing for continuous democratic adjustment.
- Involvement of adults: Adults residing permanently in the country must have citizenship rights (Dahl, 2010: 47-48).

The term democracy encompasses various meanings, including (Heywood, 2018:146-147);

- A form of government by the poor and disadvantaged.
- A system where people govern themselves directly without professional politicians or public officials.
- A form of government based on equality of opportunity and individual merit.
- A system aiming to reduce social inequalities and promote well-being.
- A decision-making system based on the principle of majority rule.

- A system of governance securing the rights and interests of minorities through controls on the power of the majority.
- A form of government fulfilling public duties through a competitive struggle for people's votes.
- A form of government serving the interests of the people, irrespective of their participation in political life.

Examining the concept of democracy and its historical development reveals an ongoing discussion, evolution, and varied applications across societies. Democracy is not an invention that emerged suddenly, akin to other scientific inventions; rather, it is a concept that has developed and been applied over centuries. Therefore, it is crucial to view the concept of democracy as a continuous process, subject to significant change in the past and likely to evolve with differences in the future.

2. TYPES OF DEMOCRACY

The liberal model serves as the foundation for the majority of democratic systems worldwide, emphasizing strong procedural elements. In this model, the democratic process is likened to a market-like competition among strategic players, including interest groups, political parties, and elites. Citizens are viewed as occasional participants in politics, acting as consumers expressing individual preferences.

2.1. Theory of Pluralistic Democracy

Democracy necessitates citizens' thoughts to influence decisions impacting societal life. Proponents of pluralistic democracy strongly advocate for representative order while vehemently opposing plebiscite democracy. The model underlying pluralistic democracy distinguishes between sovereign individuals and those subject to sovereignty, emphasizing representation through 'responsible representatives' (Schmidt, 2002).

2.2. Participatory Democracy

Schmidt, divides participatory democracy into two basic schools: the empirical-analytic school and the empirical-analytic school School related to normative society and political theory. "The normative school is an expansive or He has made significant contributions to the understanding of participatory democracy. Therefore, he is It is located in the center of the part. The situation, form, conditions and are examined as effects. Participate in public affairs as much as possible, for example and that the meeting of interests, the alignment of interests, communication, compromise and voting such as participation as a mode

of peaceful agreement between those who have the right to use it (Schmidt, 2002). Participatory democracy, as divided by Schmidt, comprises two fundamental schools: the empirical-analytic school and the normative school related to society and political theory. The normative school contributes significantly to the understanding of participatory democracy, examining conditions and effects. Strong democracy, as defined by Barber, emphasizes the continuous struggle for self-establishment, creating laws, transforming private interests into public goods, and empowering citizens in the political community (Barber, 1995).

2.3. Protective Democracy

Democracy based on protection seeks conditional approval of democratic governance, representing a limited and indirect form of democracy. Directors' consent is established through regular and competitive elections, ensuring accountability. The protective democracy system operates within formal and informal rules controlling the exercise of power (Heywood, 2018:154-155).

2.4. Social Democracy

The theory of social democracy, shaped by debates on the 'social state of law,' is essentially 'liberal' in Germany. It views the state as an entity that limits its function to maintaining internal order and external defense. The 'social state of law' incorporates the instrument of the interventionist state, particularly in pursuing social equality goals (Schmidt, 2002).

2.5. Radical Democracy

Radical democracy transcends viewing democracy as merely a means of governance. Instead, it sees democracy as a general principle applicable to various aspects of social existence. Radical democracy recognizes the fundamental right to make decisions affecting people's lives and advocates for broad political power distribution through collective participation (Heywood, 2018:150-151).

3. WHY PARTICIPATORY GOVERNANCE AND DEMOCRACY?

Over the last few decades, a trend has emerged where various forms of political participation—representative, direct, dialogical, and symbolic—are interconnected. Democratic innovation has led to the creation of a hybrid democracy, incorporating elements from different participation forms. Traditional governance, with a focus on representation and civil society involvement in a neo-corporatist design, has seen diversification in political participation since the 1990s, encompassing both representative and direct forms,

as well as involvement of previously excluded interest groups. While there have been some setbacks, the strong incorporation of civil society appears to be an ongoing trend in the coming decades (Kersting, 2012:21).

"The Future of Forum for Democracy," organized by the Council of Europe in Spain in 2008, outlined the principles of e-democracy:

- E-democracy's Role: Evaluating the opportunities presented by ICTs to strengthen democracy, democratic institutions, and the democratic process.
- Technology and Democracy: Acknowledging that e-democracy is not solely about technology but is, to a large extent, about democracy. Evolution through advanced technologies should align with democratic management principles and practices.
- Risks of E-democracy: Recognizing risks such as the digital divide and e-discrimination. Addressing these risks requires suitable risk assessment, risk management measures, ongoing monitoring, and political will.
- Fundamental Democratic System: Understanding e-democracy as a basic democratic system that acknowledges free and fair elections, ensures safety for exercising human rights and freedom of expression, and safeguards personal data and privacy.
- Addressing Declining Interest: Aiming to repair declining interest in political and democratic processes.
- Enhancing Democratic Involvement: Providing an opportunity for people to be more involved in every stage of the democratic process (Council of Europe, 2008).

Understanding "e-participation" as the use of digital tools for political participation, it encompasses a broad range of formally institutionalized mechanisms and informal expressions of civic participation. Three basic functions of participation in the policy cycle include:

- Monitoring: Involves the control of political processes, actors, and decisions through access to digital resources, e-information, online negotiation, and discussion (e-negotiation).
- Agenda Setting: Encompasses political outreach, discussion of political issues, mobilization of support for political projects (e-campaign), and formal requests to government agencies (e-petitions).
- Decision-making: Involves providing cognitive or evaluative input into political decisions (e-consultation), prioritizing budget expenditures (e-participatory budgeting), and voting on political alternatives (e-voting) (Aicholzer and Rose, 2002:93-94).

Digitalization has initiated a transformation in all areas of democratic life, affecting citizens' participation in politics and decision-making processes. This transformation allows everyone to express their opinions and value the opinions of others, enabling mass communication and participation across geographical boundaries. In the context of participatory management, developments in communication technology are expected to positively contribute and aid in the development of new mechanisms. Technological advancements facilitate the expansion of participation practices, providing an economical and rapid means for citizens to play an active role in matters that concern them, not just during elections.

4. CAN E-DEMOCRACY BE A TOOL FOR DIRECT DEMOCRACY?

The rapid proliferation of the Internet since the 1990s has generated high expectations for democracy and public administration. Electronic channels for information processing, communication, and transaction provide opportunities for enhanced democratic participation. These features, increasingly integrated through electronic devices, enable citizens to access information, engage in discussions, and cast votes, contributing to the concepts of e-democracy and e-government, which encompass all forms of public service delivery, including internal public administration (Kersting, 2012).

Direct democracy, a system where citizens participate directly in government tasks without intermediaries, eliminates the distinction between rulers and the ruled. Positive aspects of direct democracy include:

- **Increased Citizen Control:** Being the purest form of democracy, it enhances citizens' control over their own destiny.
- **Educational Benefits:** It fosters a more informed and politically versatile citizenry, providing educational benefits.
- **Expression of Public Views:** It allows the public to express interests and views without relying on self-serving politicians.
- **Legitimacy of Administration:** Decisions made by the public are more likely to be accepted, securing the legitimacy of the administration (Heywood, 2018).

Rousseau, a strong proponent of direct democracy, based his theory of popular sovereignty on the essence of democracy. Rousseau asserted that sovereignty cannot be transferred or represented by anyone other than the people, advocating for people to make laws themselves (Gözler, 2011).

Traditional democracy, shaped by processes of industrialization and mass consumerism, often operates with distinctions between political actors, distributors of politics (traditional media), and the wider electorate. The concept

of e-democracy today heavily relies on participatory and deliberative democracy, emphasizing political participation and deliberation as crucial for social integration in liberal societies (Bruns, 2009; Lindner and Aichholzer, 2002).

The debate on e-democracy centers on expectations regarding Information and Communication Technologies (ICT) altering political communication and democratic practices. Hacker and van Dijk (2000) summarized claims about the effects of ICT on democracy:

- **Increased Information Provision:** ICT enhances the scale and speed of information provision, creating more informed citizens.
- **Easier Political Participation:** The process of participating in politics becomes easier, overcoming obstacles like apathy, shyness, disabilities, and time constraints.
- **New Ways of Organizing:** Computer-Mediated Communication (CMC) creates new ways of organizing with subject-specific groups for discussion, reducing distribution costs.
- **Emergence of Political Communities:** The Internet allows new political communities to emerge without state intervention.
- **Citizen Input into Agendas:** Citizens have more input into creating government agendas.
- **Removal of Distorting Mediators:** CMC helps remove mediators like journalists, representatives, and parties that distort information.
- **Direct Address of Citizen Concerns:** Politics can address citizen concerns more directly through ICT and CMC for political marketing research.

The growth of the Internet has influenced various stakeholders, leading to debates on new democratization and the idealized revival of Athenian democracy. The Internet's role is seen as enhancing political rights, transparency, and democratization (Kersting, 2012:11).

Table1. Electronic democracy functions and selected instruments

Information	Communication	Participation
News, press clippings, press releases, photo gallery	E-mail	Internet- voting
Newsletter	News groups	E –petition
Webcam-feed, (real simple syndication) rss-feed	Webforum	Register as voter, Register as volunteer
Archives; (Newsletter, Text, Video, Audio, Photo, Speeches, Chat, Other)	Chat forum	Join party: Newsletter, email-list, Events,
Download promotional material	Internet conference	Donate function
Contact information, Links		Online shop (political organizations)
Personal events calendar		Political games, apolitical games
General political information: (inter)national political info, voting procedure inf		E-polling
Voting advice application	Dialogic instruments (chats (party members, others), guestbook, discussion board)	
Augmented reality	Online Commenting on blogs, wikis etc.	
Crowdsourcing time location based on information (Ushahidi etc.), geosocial services	Comments on external instruments (e.g. SNS, Twitter etc.)	Online Rating (voting, rating, social book marking events)
Social media (external coloboration publication) (You Tube, Twitter, Wiki, SNS)	Video Online conference (Barcamps etc.)	
Social media (internal) podcasts, weblogs, YouTubes-plug-in, Twitter-plugin)		

Source: Gibson 2003, Lilleker et al. 2009’as cited Kersting, 2012

Today, debates regarding the feasibility of implementing direct democracy persist, sparking differences of opinion between its proponents and opponents.

1. Criticism: In representative democracies, regular elections provide citizens with the opportunity to make choices in public policies, eliminating the need for referendums between elections.

2. Response: Democracy is not merely about choosing among presented options but entails direct citizen participation in fundamental decision-making, necessitating referendums for such involvement.
3. Criticism: In modern states with large populations and territories, ensuring public participation in negotiations and policy votes is challenging.
4. Response: Electronic media, such as the internet, computers, radio, and telephone, eliminate the need for physical presence in negotiations. Today's communication technologies enable interactive discussions even in remote areas.
5. Criticism: Direct democracy might undermine institutions like parliament, political parties, and government crucial in representative democracies. Constant policy changes based on majority decisions could risk democracy.
6. Response: Implementing direct democracy need not eliminate existing political institutions. A system can be designed to leave legislative power to the people while maintaining the strength of the government and judiciary.
7. Criticism: Not all citizens possess the necessary education, knowledge, and expertise for sound political decisions, potentially leading to wrong choices in the complex world of modern state administration.
8. Response: Political issues aren't exclusive to politicians, and citizens' participation can enhance decision-making. Over time, personal involvement in decision-making processes will educate citizens and increase expertise.
9. Criticism: Representative democracy strikes a balance between public participation and expert opinion, disrupting this balance by neglecting expertise can lead to poor decisions.
10. Response: While expertise is crucial, experts do not always make correct decisions. Direct democracy doesn't exclude expertise; experts can contribute to informing the public during the negotiation process, with citizens making the ultimate decisions.
11. Criticism: Direct democracy may lead to arbitrary decisions.
12. Response: Arbitrary decisions are a problem in representative democracies as well. Mechanisms can be established to address this issue in both systems.
13. Criticism: The decision-making process of direct democracy, lacking compromise, might make it challenging to protect minority interests, especially those that will never be a majority based on religion, culture, or ethnicity.

Response: This problem is not exclusive to direct democracy and is evident in representative democracies, as seen in the Northern Ireland example. Decision-making processes requiring consensus are crucial for both systems (Budge, 1996).

When considering the arguments for and against direct democracy and representative democracy, the fundamental question arises: Do we genuinely want to implement direct democracy? This question has multiple perspectives, but it holds particular significance for those governing the country, including political parties. The implementation of direct democracy poses risks for those in power, perhaps making them feel less indispensable. The ongoing discussion is meaningful as long as the tools of direct democracy are integrated into social life and governance, positively influencing decisions in favor of society and the public interest.

5. CONCLUSION

Developments in information and communication technologies have profoundly affected various aspects of life, including state-citizen relations, public administrations, and the policy-making process. The concept of democracy has also evolved in response to these technological advancements. The tools of direct democracy are poised to see more widespread use with continued progress in this field. The emergence of electronic democracy is a significant factor in the advancement and evolution of democracy, providing a fresh perspective to discussions, particularly concerning the limitations of representative democracy in ensuring justice in representation.

The theory of representation is primarily founded on the belief that voters will make the most suitable choices, but practical challenges impede this ideal. Barriers to participation include pre-election candidate selection processes within political parties. Overcoming the representative democracy crisis can be viewed as an opportunity through the development of information technologies. Offering the electorate diverse options beyond traditional electoral behavior is crucial. Information technology advancements enable broader awareness and discussion of various subjects. Enhanced participation not only fosters citizen acceptance of decisions but also necessitates consideration of the societal level of social and economic development.

For e-democracy to serve as a tool for participatory governance, widespread internet and technology use by citizens is essential. E-democracy applications aim to foster strong collaboration among governments, parliaments, and citizens. Establishing a democratic social order is a common objective for almost all countries, and expanding the use of direct democracy tools, such as referendums

and people's initiatives, is crucial. The future of the internet and electronic democracy is uncertain, with the influence of technological developments on our daily lives being both powerful and potentially transformative.

The internet's penetration has significantly impacted various societal groups, from minority elites to less affluent segments, over the last four decades. Acknowledging that no system is flawless, debates on direct democracy and representative democracy should be approached within this context. Rather than viewing direct democracy and representative democracy as competing models, they should be seen as complementary systems capable of addressing each other's shortcomings. Direct democracy tools can be instrumental in areas where representative democracy falls short or faces criticism, contributing to the ongoing improvement of democratic governance.

When we consider democracy as a process, it is observed that it has undergone significant change and transformation over the past two thousand years. Especially in the last century, the majority of countries have made significant efforts to establish a democratic societal order. The initial implementation of democracy, known as direct democracy, has once again become the focus of discussions, thanks to developments in information and communication technology. This study discusses the use of mechanisms facilitated by evolving technologies to increase citizens' participation in the governance of the country through direct democracy. It is predicted that, contrary to its recent impracticality, the applications of direct democracy tools will increase in the present and future, driven by technological advancements.

REFERENCES

- Aicholzer, G., Rose, G.(2002). Experience with Digital Tools in Different Types of e-Participation, in Practice, Hennen, L., Korthagen, I., Lindler I., Keulen, I., Aicholzer I., Nielsen, R. (ed). Studies in Digital Politics and Governance.
- Aristoteles, (1983). Politika, Translator M, Tuncay, Remzi Kitabevi: İstanbul
- Barber, B. (1995). Güçlü Demokrasi. İstanbul: Ayrıntı.
- Bruns, A. (2009). Blogs, Wikipedia, Second Life and Beyond: From Production to Produsage, New York, Peter Lang.
- Budge, I.(1996). The New Challange of Direct Democracy, Polity Pres
- Council of Europe, (2008). E-Democracy: Who Dares?"
https://www.coe.int/t/dgap/forum-democracy/Activities/Forum%20sessions/2008/Proceedings_FFD08_EN.pdf, Date of Access: 25.11.2023
- Dahl, R. A. (2010). Demokrasi Üzerine. Ankara: Phoenix Yayınları
- Gözler, K. (2011), Anayasa Hukukuna Giriş, Ekin Yayınları, Bursa.
- Hacker, K. L., & van Dijk, J. (2000). What is digital democracy? in K. L. Hacker & J. van Dijk (Eds.), Digital democracy. Issues of theory and practice (pp. 1–9). London: Sage
- Heywood, A. (2018). Siyaset, çev. Fahri Bakırcı, BB101 Yayınları: Ankara
- Kersting, N. (2012). The Future of Electronic Democracy in Electronic Democracy, Norbert Kersting (ed), Barbara Budrich Publishers,
- Kışlalı, A.T (1998). Siyasal Sistemler Siyasal Çatışma Ve Uzlaşma, İmge Kitabevi: Ankara
- Lindner, R., Aichholzer, G. (2002). E- Democracy:Conceptual Foundations and Recent Trends, in European E-Democracy in Practice, Hennen, L., Korthagen, I., Lindler I., Keulen, I., Aicholzer I., Nielsen, R. (ed). Studies in Digital Politics and Governance.

CHAPTER 5

EXAMINING FINANCIAL TECHNOLOGY IN THE CONTEXT OF ISLAMIC FINANCE (A QUALITATIVE RESEARCH ON PARTICIPATION BANKS)

DOÇ. DR. İSMAİL KARATAŞ

Abstract

With the rapid development of digital technology, traditional finance and modern technology have combined to create financial technologies. When evaluated within the scope of financial technology, new business models and technologies used cover a wide range from the Internet of Things to cyber security, artificial intelligence to cloud computing, and crypto assets to blockchain. These technologies find their counterparts in business models for financial technologies such as open banking, digital wallets, payment services and crowdfunding. Financial technology is considered an emerging sector or a way to improve financial services processes. In this context, financial technologies are critical in bringing today's financial institutions to an advantageous position. Considering the nature of financial technologies and their speed, it is essential to ensure both the accuracy of the definitions and the up-to-dateness of the relevant regulations. Accordingly, in the context of Islamic finance, there needs to be more literature on the functionality of financial technology for participation banks, which are defined as the banking system that shares profits and losses with savers. In this respect, this qualitative study aims to reveal the importance of financial technologies in participation banks in the context of Islamic finance and to raise awareness of these technologies. The literature review was used in the study to achieve this aim. As a result of the literature review, it was understood that financial technology is essential for participation banks to ensure effective and efficient business processes.

Keywords: Financial Technology, FinTech, Islamic Finance, Participation Bank.

¹ Bayburt Üniversitesi, Spor Bilimleri Fakültesi, Bayburt
ORCID ID: 0000-0002-1237-4670
ismailkaratas@bayburt.edu.tr

INTRODUCTION

FinTech (Fintek-Financial Technology), as the name suggests, combines finance and technology (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019). Instead of the concept of Financial Technology, the term “Alternative Finance” is used in the UK and “Digital Finance” is used in technical documents by international organizations such as the World Bank (Xiang et al., 2017). The concept of FinTech was developed by Dorfleitner et al. (2017) to refer to companies and company representatives that combine innovative services produced with modern technology with finance, and emphasis is placed on company representatives. Merello, Barberá and Poza (2022) emphasize financial technology initiatives and entrepreneurs by saying that FinTech refers to companies that use technology-based systems to provide innovative and cheaper financial services or make traditional financial services efficient. Similarly, Chen, Wu and Yang (2019) state that the FinTech concept consists of digital computing technologies that have been applied to financial services or can be applied, developed or developed in the future. Additionally, Vasiljeva and Lukanova (2016) state that FinTech is not only a term related to a single method and solution or traditional financial institutions that want to modernize their processes but also emerging technologies that want to disrupt traditional industries.

FinTech innovations affect many different areas of financial services, and this concept includes; It is defined as technologically enabled innovation that can result in new business models, practices, processes or products that have a material impact on financial markets and institutions and the provision of financial services (Financial Stability Board, 2023). According to Philippon (2017), FinTech covers digital innovations and technology-supported business model innovations in the financial sector. Such innovations can disrupt existing industry structures and blur industry boundaries, facilitate strategic disintermediation, create fundamental changes in how existing firms create and deliver products and services, provide new doors for entrepreneurship, and democratize access to financial services. On the other hand, privacy raises regulatory and law enforcement challenges. Innovations at the centre of FinTech today: Cryptocurrencies and blockchain, new digital advisory and trading systems, artificial intelligence and machine learning, peer-to-peer lending, equity crowdfunding and mobile payment systems can be cited as examples (p. 2). In the context of these rapid developments in technology, one of the areas where technology has radically changed lives and businesses in the banking sector (Sardana & Singhania, 2018).

The banking sector is heavily regulated due to its role as the basic infrastructure of market economies (Bofondi & Gobbi, 2017). Therefore, it is

understood that banks, considered an indispensable element of financial markets, are intertwined with this technology (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019). It is thought that it is essential for participation banks, especially interest-free banking, to adapt to this technology. In this regard, it can be argued that financial technologies should be examined in the context of participation banks. Accordingly, this qualitative research, which uses a literature review approach within the framework of Islamic finance, aims to examine financial technology in the context of participation banks. In this context, it is thought that revealing the importance of financial technologies in participation banks, which are considered in the context of Islamic finance, can contribute to increasing awareness of these technologies.

FINANCIAL TECHNOLOGY

According to Dorfleitner et al. (2017), the concept of "FinTech", which is the short form of the expression financial technology, refers to companies or company representatives that combine financial services with modern, innovative technologies (p. 5). FinTech, as the name suggests, combines finance and technology (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019). As a rule, new entrants to the market offer internet-based and application-oriented products. FinTechs generally aim to attract customers with products and services that are more user-friendly, efficient, transparent, and automated than currently available (p. 5). However, it is thought that traditional banks have not yet fully used these improvement opportunities (EBF, 2015; Mackenzie, 2015). In this context, according to Dorfleitner et al. (2017), in addition to offering products and services in the banking sector, FinTechs distribute insurance and other financial instruments or provide third-party services. Additionally, FinTech companies are subject to different legal and regulatory obligations due to their different business models and highly diverse products and services (p. 6). Fintech: It started with money transfers, mobile payments, crowdfunding, and peer-to-peer lending (P2P) and has expanded to cryptocurrencies, more recently blockchain, and roboinvesting advisory (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019).

The business models in which financial technology startups realise their products and services are classified under six primary headings; These; It can be expressed as payments, wealth management, lending, crowdfunding, capital markets and insurance transactions (Lee & Shin, 2018). FinTech covers a wide range of activities and businesses, from developing new technologies to commercialising financial services (Bofondi & Gobbi, 2017). In this context, from a financial policy perspective, the Financial Stability Board organises FinTech activities in five broad categories (Financial Stability Board, 2017):

- Payments, clearing and settlement,
- Deposits, lending and capital raising,
- Insurance,
- Investment management,
- Market support.

According to Bofondi and Gobbi (2017), these five classes cover almost all the services traditional financial institutions provide. New FinTech companies threaten established companies' market shares and profit margins in almost all business areas. The financial sector, particularly the banking sector, is heavily regulated due to its role as the fundamental infrastructure of market economies. Interruptions in the supply of financial services can have considerable consequences regarding welfare losses (p. 108). In many cases, financial innovation triggers widespread instability; Therefore, the balance between the costs and benefits of competition in the sector is considered necessary (Thakor, 2012). In this regard, according to Bofondi and Gobbi (2017), an early understanding of the transformations triggered by FinTech in the financial environment is very meaningful for the efficient development of the regulatory framework. Additionally, since most existing regulations are institution-focused rather than activity-focused, it is also essential to evaluate how startup FinTech firms adapt to the framework and how established institutions respond (p. 108).

According to Goldstein, Jiang, and Karolyi (2019), technology has always affected the financial sector, and developments have changed how it works. The introduction of ATMs (Automated Teller Machines) or the use of bank transfers are meaningful innovations that can be cited as examples of this situation. In this context, it can be said that FinTech has caused radical changes in the financial field. In this regard, the speed at which new technologies are tested and introduced to the financial sector is faster than ever. However, much of the change is occurring outside the financial sector, as young start-ups and large established technology firms seek to disrupt established firms by introducing new products and technologies and providing a significant new environment for competition (p. 1647-1648).

Characteristics of Financial Technology Start-ups

Many FinTech initiatives have common characteristics, some of which are presented below:

- FinTech startups are more agile than traditional financial institutions (Jucevičius, Jucevičienė, & Žigienė, 2021),
- They eliminate intermediation in financial transactions with some business models and the innovations they introduce (Laahane et al., 2019),

- There is the use of open-source computing and application programming interfaces, in other words, customer user interfaces (for example, mobile applications) (Imerman & Fabozzi, 2020; Wilamowicz, 2019),
- They generally do not make significant fixed-asset infrastructure investments (Chuen & Teo, 2015),
- They focus on the unique offering of one/several products or services (Jucevičius, Jucevičienė, & Žigienė, 2021),
- The essential components of the technologies they use are data, computing and interface (Anshari, Almunawar, & Masri, 2020; Stulz, 2022),
- Many FinTech startups have products that can be used on mobile phones and are therefore seen as consumer-friendly (Stulz, 2022),
- Instead of offering products like traditional banks, they have a holistic approach that structures their business models according to purposes such as creating new service and customer experience, standards, and a solution-oriented approach to customer problems (Vives, 2019),
- Services of FinTech startups provide cost savings, and operations are easier (Jucevičius, Jucevičienė, & Žigienė, 2021).

It is argued that a well-functioning FinTech ecosystem is built on four key ecosystem features (HM Treasury, 2016):

- **Talent:** Availability of technical, financial system and entrepreneurial talents,
- **Capital:** Availability of financial resources for new initiatives and scale increase,
- **Policy:** Government policy regarding regulation, taxes and sector growth initiatives,
- **Demand:** End customer demand from consumers, companies and financial institutions.

Reasons for the Growth of the Financial Technology Sector

These developments, called FinTech, have a wide range of developments, from new digital payment systems and digital or electronic currencies to online investment/finance platforms and data analysis, which have been highly influential in traditional financial markets and services (Brummer & Gorfine, 2014). In this context, the reasons for the growth of FinTech are presented below:

- *Changing Consumer Behaviors and Attitudes* (Pollari, 2016): Changing consumer behaviours and attitudes play a significant role in the development of the FinTech sector. Consumers quickly adopt new technologies and turn to FinTechs, alternative sources, to meet their financial needs. Consumers demand greater convenience, speed and

flexibility from traditional banks or financial institutions to meet their financial needs. However, these needs cannot be met very much.

- *Increase in Digital and Mobile Device Usage*: The emergence of smartphone technology and the resulting widespread use of smartphones has created a demand for new products and services that will work in the mobile environment, and in order to meet this demand, FinTech companies offer products such as mobile payment technologies, online banking and brokerage products developed (Schindler, 2017). Mobile devices have become widespread in recent years, and there is an incredible increase in the data created by social media platforms due to internet use (Pollari, 2016).
- *Loss of Trust After the 2008 Financial Crisis (Lawrence, 2014)*: After the global financial crisis of 2008, the decrease in trust in the banking system and the clear visibility of technological inadequacies resulted in the development of the FinTech sector. This situation has caused a new perspective in the banking sector. However, customer experience has become more critical over time, and the aggravated legal regulations applied to the banking sector after the financial crisis have caused large banks to review their relationships with newly established technological companies or manufacturers. Banks have begun to see the products and services offered by newly established technology companies as competitive power in the market.

ISLAMIC FINANCE

Islamic finance is a financial system in which financial activities are carried out by Islamic rules (Gheeraert & Weill, 2015). Islamic finance is a system that provides the financial functions performed by the conventional financial system for individuals and institutions while also taking into account that these functions comply with Islamic rules (Güçlü & Kılıç, 2020). Islamic rules consist of principles and prohibitions from the Holy Quran and the Sunnah of the Prophet Muhammad (s.a.v.) (Türcan, 2010). Among these rules, the rules on which Islamic finance is based can be summarized as rules regarding interest prohibition, risk sharing, avoiding excessive uncertainty, avoiding excessive risk-taking and gambling-like behaviour, avoiding prohibited activities and actions, being asset-based, transactions being contract-based, property rights (Iqbal & Mirakhor, 2011; Omar, Abduh, & Sukmana, 2013). In the Islamic finance system, it is prohibited to engage in transactions that are not based on real economic activity, do not carry the risks that come with these activities, and obtain fixed returns (Syed Ali, 2008).

The main reason for the emergence of Islamic finance is that savers with high religious sensitivities want to evaluate their savings without contradicting Islamic rules, and on the other hand, those who need funds want to borrow in line with their religious beliefs (Yanpar, 2015). As a result of these needs, Islamic finance has emerged as an alternative to the traditional financial system in the light of Islamic rules with the guidance of Islamic scholars (Güçlü, 2018).

The global financial crisis in 2008 revealed the weaknesses of the traditional financial system (El Khamlichi, Sannajust, & Sarkar, 2014). The relatively successful performance of Islamic financial institutions in this period gave rise to the idea that Islamic finance could be an alternative to the traditional financial system (Güçlü, 2018). According to Iqbal and Mirakhor (2011), the financial system has many functions, such as transferring investments and savings to successful enterprises, monitoring managers' performance, diversifying and transferring risk, and establishing institutions where goods and services can be traded healthily. Thanks to these functions, effective distribution of resources, development of physical and human capital, reduction of transaction costs, and acceleration of technological development are ensured, and all these contributions feed economic development (p. 113).

According to Güçlü (2018), the financial system fulfils the functions it provides for the economy through financial institutions and instruments. The institutions and tools are banks, stock exchanges, investment funds, the insurance sector, debt, and derivative instruments. The Islamic finance system also offers its users the mentioned financial institutions and instruments used by the traditional finance system, albeit in different forms. The difference is the sensitivity of institutions in the Islamic financial system to act according to Islamic rules in their transactions and activities. In this context, participation banking is one of the main application areas of Islamic finance (pp. 68-69).

PARTICIPATION BANKS

Participation banks are institutions that were established to meet the financial needs of Muslims and have different functions and rules than conventional banking (Şekkeli & Güçlü, 2023). According to Yanpar (2015), participation banks collect the savings of households and investors and channel these savings into investments. In this context, it cannot be said that the primary function of participation banks is very different from traditional banks. The difference between them is the methods applied in performing this function. Participation banks act by Islamic rules in financial transactions (p. 125).

According to Kalaycı (2013), the main reason for the emergence of participation banks is to bring the savings of Muslims who do not want to invest

in interest-bearing banks into the economy. In addition, reasons such as the flow of oil-increased revenues of the Gulf countries to banks in the West and that traditional banks prefer short-term loans rather than long-term investment projects also played a role in establishing participation banks (p. 61).

According to Kettell (2011), the basic logic of the participation banking system is that activities are carried out based on the principle of profit-loss sharing. These banks cannot receive interest from their customers for the funds they provide. However, they participate in the profit resulting from the project in which the fund is used. Likewise, individuals who deposit their savings in a participation bank receive a share of their profits at a predetermined rate. In this case, on the one hand, a partnership relationship is established between the participation bank and the saver, and on the other hand, another partnership relationship is established between the participation bank and the investor in need of funds. In such a relationship, the participation bank acts as a fund manager that efficiently uses savers' resources (p. 32).

EXAMINATION OF FINANCIAL TECHNOLOGY IN THE CONTEXT OF PARTICIPATION BANKS

After the global financial crisis, a new paradigm has gradually emerged: financial technology (Dai & Chen, 2022). FinTech refers to technology-enabled innovation in financial services that can result in new business models, applications, processes or products that have a material impact on the provision of financial services (Financial Stability Board, 2017). FinTech can be understood as a "FinTech Cube" consisting of three dimensions (Lai & Samers, 2021):

- Financial products and services,
- Technologies,
- Key actors involved in the provision of technologically enabled financial products and services.

In terms of applied technologies, FinTech can be defined both narrowly and broadly (Dai & Chen, 2022). The narrow definition refers to the latest FinTech revolution that applies a narrow set of advanced technologies (specifically, artificial intelligence, blockchain, cloud computing, big data, and the Internet of Things) to financial services (Chen, Wu, & Yang, 2019; Laidroo & Avarmaab, 2020). The broad definition refers to the long-term FinTech evolution based on a series of technologies such as telex networks, electronic telecommunication devices, the internet, artificial intelligence and big data (Arner, Barberis, & Buckley, 2015; Buchanan & Cao, 2018; Claessens et al., 2018; Cojoianu et al., 2021). Since 2013, the most advanced technologies (e.g., artificial intelligence,

blockchain, and big data) have been gradually integrated into financial services (Dai & Chen, 2022).

FinTech, as the name suggests, combines finance and technology (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019). According to Geng, Guo and Cheng (2023), fintech applications have come to the fore in global financial markets in recent years. The scope of activity in FinTech started with mobile payments, money transfers, peer-to-peer loans and crowdfunding and is now expanding into the newer world of artificial intelligence, big data, cloud computing and blockchain. Start-up companies with new technology are competing to fill the gaps left by traditional companies in customer experience in all these dimensions. Due to the intense interest in FinTech, FinTech start-ups are spreading rapidly and in large numbers (p. 1811). This rise of FinTech is welcomed, and it is argued that emerging technologies have the potential to radically transform financial services by making transactions cheaper, more convenient, and more secure (Begenau, Farboodi, & Veldkamp, 2018; Chen, Wu, & Yang, 2019; Chiu & Koepl, 2019; Fuster et al., 2019; Zhu, 2019).

According to Vives (2017), with the production of new business models based on big data, Fintech has the potential to disrupt established financial intermediaries, especially banks. Big data can be processed with artificial intelligence algorithms by leveraging advanced computing power (including cloud computing, mobile storage via the cloud, and mobile hardware that allows continuous availability). Machine learning is a form of artificial intelligence that allows computers to learn without an explicit program; “Deep learning” refers to the attempt to extract meaning from big data using layers of learning algorithms. Applying new techniques can result in lowering financial intermediation costs and improving consumer products. Fintech opportunities can help better assess the creditworthiness of financing applicants when an institution screens them and improve the interface between financial customers and service providers. In this context, it is stated that online lending technology allows FinTech outlets to provide more convenience to their borrowers and demands an interest rate premium among borrowers who value this convenience more. Using advanced statistical models based on big data, FinTech firms better screen potential borrowers and are more adept at pricing mortgage risk and price discrimination. This is achieved by combining existing data or using other data dimensions that traditional banks cannot access (p. 98).

According to Navaretti, Calzolari and Pozzolo (2017), FinTechs provide the same services as banks, more efficiently thanks to technologies, but in a different and differentiated way. Crowdfunding platforms, like banks, can be cited as an example of this by converting savings into loans and investments. However,

unlike banks, the information they use is based on big data, not long-term relationships; Access to services is not only centralized through internet platforms; There is no risk and maturity transformation; Lenders and borrowers or investors and investment opportunities are matched directly. In this case, there is disintermediation, and these transactions are pure FinTech activities. On the other hand, the scope of these pure FinTech unbundled activities is limited. Accordingly, it is difficult for these platforms to offer diversified investment opportunities to their customers without keeping some of the risks in their books or securitizing their loan portfolios. However, other functions run through FinTechs rather than banks, such as payment systems (e.g. using Apple Pay instead of credit cards), which banks still support. Banks lose some of their margins but still maintain their ultimate interface with their customers and expand their scope of operations due to the efficiency of these new systems. Therefore, in this case, there may be strong complementarities between banks and FinTechs. The value chain of banks includes many package services and activities. FinTechs generally carry out one or more of these activities in a disaggregated manner. However, bundling provides strong economies of scope. In this context, banking economics is how banks make deposits, payments, loans, etc. It is based on the ability to bring services together and has a strong rationale for doing so (p. 10).

According to Sardana and Singhania (2018), in the context of rapid developments in technology, one of the areas where technology radically changes lives and businesses is the banking sector. The introduction of digital technology into the banking field has led to a paradigm change in banking and created a phenomenon called Digital Banking. In broad terms, digital banking means using technology to carry out banking transactions smoothly. Therefore, Digital Banking includes online banking, electronic banking and mobile banking, among the commonly used terms. Unlike traditional banking, digital banks aim to develop adaptable digital products and services that meet the needs of their digital customers. While traditional online banks use pre-designed software to increase their reach and presence and respond to customer needs, digital banks use IT experts to understand customers and design their products accordingly. In this context, the integration of technology is now indispensable for every sector, and businesses that do not adapt to this face serious consequences. In this regard, it is thought that it is crucial for participation banks to adapt to technological innovations, especially since the banking sector and participation banks are very dependent on customers (p. 28).

According to Melnychenko, Volosovych and Baraniuk (2020), thanks to FinTechs in digital banking, it is possible to create and store large amounts of data, analyze and apply analysis results simultaneously, provide personalized

banking services and perform the functions of centrally storing information about the customer. In addition, these technologies make it easier to make effective investment and financing decisions and increase banking operations' information security level. In this context, financial services markets are being transformed by the influence of FinTechs. Developing FinTech tools by non-banking organizations requires identifying opportunities for use in banks. The level of development of the FinTech set used by banks constitutes the digital banking system, which is the bank's main competitive advantage in the business environment. Digital banking is depicted by the continuity and security of banking services that enable the consumer to receive them online around the clock, personalization of banking services, digital identity verification of users and digitalization of banking transactions through replacement of paperwork. The use of FinTechs in digital banking offers opportunities to automate customer segmentation processes, reduce costs in payment processing, optimize accounting, finance and tax accounting, improve customer service and expand the customer base while maximizing revenue in specific business segments (p. 92).

According to Melnychenko, Volosovych and Baraniuk (2020), the main usage areas of FinTechs in digital banking are customer behaviour analysis, transaction monitoring, customer identification and segmentation, fraud management, personalization of banking services, risk assessment and regulatory compliance, customer response analysis, process automation, financial consultancy, investment decision making, trade facilitation, syndicated loan services and P2P transfers. Expectations for developing financial technology tools in digital banking include strengthening the interaction between regulatory institutions, banks and FinTech companies and developing new-generation banking and open banking services (p. 92).

According to Geng, Guo and Cheng (2023), with the rise of FinTech innovations worldwide, predictions are made about how they will affect the banking sector. In general, there are two sources of FinTech's effects on the banking sector: "External FinTech" and "Bank FinTech". "External FinTech" refers to FinTech outside the banking industry, such as FinTech companies. It is thought that "External FinTech" may affect participation banks through competition and technology spillover effects. Specifically, it is argued that "External FinTech" will introduce intense market competition, resulting in a decline in bank business (e.g. bank loans), leading to banks energetically catching up with outside FinTech companies. In addition, it is anticipated that "External FinTech" will bring about the diffusion effects of technology towards the participation banking sector. It is stated that, compared to FinTech companies

(for example, Ali Group), banks need to be on time and faster in their tendency to implement FinTech. It can be argued that to reduce operating costs, expand information resources and improve risk management, participation banks have begun to actively imitate the advanced technology applications of these pioneers and obtain information from them. This suggests that imitation and learning may facilitate technology diffusion in participation banks. In addition, with the development of "External FinTech", it is understood that participation banks increasingly prefer to cooperate with FinTech companies and establish business connections with them. It can be stated that these business connections also lead to the spillover effects of technology (p. 1812). In this context, the effects of "External FinTech" institutions on participation banks are thought to be significant (Hou, Gao, & Wang, 2016).

"Banking FinTech" refers to applying technologies in the banking industry, including artificial intelligence, blockchain, cloud computing, big data, and internet technology (Geng, Guo, & Cheng, 2023). According to Geng, Guo, and Cheng (2023), it is thought that "Bank FinTech" can increase the stability of participating banks by improving risk control and reducing the cost of operation. In this context, it is envisaged that "Bank FinTech" can overcome the existing problem of information isolation, create a simplified and standardized risk management process, and realize the integration of risk management systems in these banks, which can improve risk control and increase the stability of participation banks (p. 1812). In this regard, it can be argued that "Bank FinTech" significantly reduces financial risk (Cheng & Qu, 2020).

According to Li, Gao, and Gu (2023), FinTech is a technology that has been comprehensively applied to financial sectors such as payment and exchange, lending and financing, asset management, retail banking, insurance and financial payment, big data, cloud computing, artificial intelligence, blockchain and can be considered as a series of technological innovations based on digital currency. This situation is thought to express the primary trend of participation banks in the future. The emergence of FinTech inevitably has several impacts on the traditional financial sector. However, it can be argued that the impact of FinTech on the profitability of traditional participation banks should be emphasized (p. 1). In this context, it is predicted that FinTech has the potential to significantly increase the availability and convenience of financial services by compressing the assets, liabilities, and brokerage businesses of participation banks (Anand & Mantrala, 2019; Thakor, 2020). In this regard, it is understood that digital technology innovation also provides positive information dissemination to participation banks (Li, Gao, & Gu, 2023). It can be said that it is crucial for participation banks to use FinTech applications, mainly to increase operational

efficiency, expand the scope of services, and develop a risk and cost-compatible approach in financial service delivery and thus increase profitability (Chen, You, & Chang, 2021; Wang, Xiuping, & Zhang, 2021).

According to Zhang et al. (2023), it is considered essential for participation banks, which are considered an important part of the financial sector, to follow the challenges and opportunities brought by FinTech. In this context, it can be argued that attention should be paid to the development of FinTech by participation banks in order to advance commercial innovation and improve their risk prevention and control ability. On the other hand, it is anticipated that the technical and operational risks inherent in the development of FinTech by participation banks will also affect financing decisions, which will inevitably affect the bank's financial risk. However, it can be stated that it will support the financial stability of participation banks through FinTech, artificial intelligence, cloud technology and other channels (p. 1). In this regard, it can be argued that it is essential for participation banks to adopt FinTech and create and develop a suitable FinTech ecosystem (Daud et al., 2022). Accordingly, it is understood that commercial banks, which are the main body of traditional financial institutions and, therefore, participation banks, can fulfil critical roles by actively applying FinTech for strategic transformation (Zhang et al., 2023).

CONCLUSIONS

FinTech, as the name suggests, combines finance and technology (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019). Innovations at the centre of FinTech today: Cryptocurrencies and blockchain, new digital advisory and trading systems, artificial intelligence and machine learning, peer-to-peer lending, equity crowdfunding and mobile payment systems are examples (p. 2). In the context of these rapid developments in technology, one of the areas where technology has radically changed lives and businesses in the banking sector (Sardana & Singhania, 2018). The banking sector is heavily regulated due to its role as the basic infrastructure of market economies (Bofondi & Gobbi, 2017). Therefore, it is understood that banks, considered an indispensable element of financial markets, are intertwined with this technology (Goldstein, Jiang, & Karolyi, 2019). It is thought that it is crucial for participation banks, especially interest-free banking, to improve their knowledge and application levels of this technology.

The global financial crisis in 2008 revealed the weaknesses of the traditional financial system (El Khamlichi, Sannajust, & Sarkar, 2014). The relatively successful performance of Islamic financial institutions in this period gave rise to the idea that Islamic finance could be an alternative to the traditional financial

system (Güçlü, 2018). According to Iqbal and Mirakhor (2011), the financial system has many functions, such as transferring investments and savings to successful enterprises, monitoring managers' performance, diversifying and transferring risk, and establishing institutions where goods and services can be traded healthily. Thanks to these functions, effective distribution of resources, development of physical and human capital, reduction of transaction costs, and acceleration of technological development are ensured, and all these contributions feed economic development (p. 113). In this context, participation banking is one of the main application areas of Islamic finance (Güçlü, 2018).

Participation banks are institutions that were established to meet the financial needs of Muslims and have different functions and rules than conventional banking (Şekkelî & Güçlü, 2023). According to Yanpar (2015), participation banks collect the savings of households and investors and channel these savings into investments. In this context, it cannot be said that the essential function of participation banks is very different from traditional banks. The difference between them is the methods applied in performing this function. Participation banks act by Islamic rules in financial transactions (p. 125).

According to Li, Gao, and Gu (2023), FinTech is a technology that has been comprehensively applied to financial sectors such as payment and exchange, lending and financing, asset management, retail banking, insurance and financial payment, big data, cloud computing, artificial intelligence, blockchain and can be considered as a series of technological innovations based on digital currency. This situation is thought to express the primary trend of participation banks in the future. The emergence of FinTech inevitably has several impacts on the traditional financial sector, but it can be argued that the impact of FinTech on the profitability of traditional participation banks should be emphasized (p. 1). In this context, it is predicted that FinTech has the potential to significantly increase the availability and convenience of financial services by compressing the assets, liabilities and brokerage businesses of participation banks (Anand & Mantrala, 2019; Thakor, 2020). In this regard, it is understood that digital technology innovation also provides positive information dissemination to participation banks (Li, Gao, & Gu, 2023). It can be said that it is crucial for participation banks to use FinTech applications, mainly to increase operational efficiency, expand the scope of services, and develop a risk and cost-compatible approach in financial service delivery and thus increase profitability (Chen, You, & Chang, 2021; Wang, Xiuping, & Zhang, 2021).

As a result, it can be argued that FinTech applications are very important for participation banks, which are considered in the context of Islamic finance, to provide effective and efficient business processes. However, the information in

this study was obtained using the literature review approach. Therefore, it is thought that the study's results can be diversified with quantitative and mixed research, and the new results obtained accordingly can add depth to the study.

REFERENCES

- Anand, D., & Mantrala, M. (2019). Responding to disruptive business model innovations: The case of traditional banks facing fintech entrants. *Journal of Banking and Financial Technology*, 3, 19-31. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s42786-018-00004-4>.
- Anshari, M., Almunawar, M. N., & Masri, M. (2020). Financial technology and disruptive innovation in business: Concept and application. *International Journal of Asian Business and Information Management*, 11(4), 29-43. <https://doi.org/10.4018/IJABIM.2020100103>.
- Arner, D. W., Barberis, J., & Buckley, R. P. (2015). *The evolution of FinTech: A new post-crisis paradigm?*. Research Paper No. 2015/047, Hong Kong: University of Hong Kong, Faculty of Law. <https://doi.org/10.2139/ssrn.2676553>.
- Begenau, J., Farboodi, M., & Veldkamp, L. (2018). Big data in finance and the growth of large firms. *Journal of Monetary Economics*, 97, 71-87. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmoneco.2018.05.013>.
- Bofondi, M., & Gobbi, G. (2017). The big promise of Fintech. *European Economy*, (2), 107-119.
- Brummer, C., & Gorfine, D. (2014). *FinTech: Building a 21st-Century Regulator's Toolkit*. Center For Financial Markets. Available at: <http://www.nickelsteamroller.com>. Accessed on 15 May 2023.
- Buchanan, B., & Cao, C. (2018). *Quo Vadis?: A Comparison of the Fintech Revolution in China and the West*. SWIFT Institute Working Paper, 2017-002, 1-57.
- Chen, M. A., Wu, Q., & Yang, B. (2019). How valuable is FinTech innovation?. *The Review of Financial Studies*, 32(5), 2062-2106. <https://doi.org/10.1093/rfs/hhy130>.
- Chen, X., You, X., & Chang, V. (2021). FinTech and commercial banks' performance in China: A leap forward or survival of the fittest?. *Technological Forecasting and Social Change*, 166, 1-12. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.techfore.2021.120645>.
- Cheng, M., & Qu, Y. (2020). Does bank FinTech reduce credit risk? Evidence from China. *Pacific-Basin Finance Journal*, 63, 1-24. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.pacfin.2020.101398>.
- Chiu, J., & Koeppl, T. V. (2019). Blockchain-based settlement for asset trading. *The Review of Financial Studies*, 32(5), 1716-1753. <https://doi.org/10.1093/rfs/hhy122>.
- Chuen, D. L. K., & Teo, E. G. S. (2015). Emergence of FinTech and the LASIC principles. *Journal of Financial Perspectives*, 3(3), 24-36.

- Claessens, S., Frost, J., Turner, G., & Zhu, F. (2018). Fintech credit markets around the world: Size, drivers and policy issues. *BIS Quarterly Review*, 9, 29-49.
- Cojoianu, T. F., Clark, G. L., Hoepner, A. G., Pažitka, V., & Wójcik, D. (2021). Fin vs. tech: Are trust and knowledge creation key ingredients in fintech start-up emergence and financing? *Small Business Economics*, 57(4), 1715-1731. <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11187-020-00367-3>.
- Dai, D., & Chen, Y. (2022). The geography of the fintech industry in China: An analysis of China's city-level patenting. *Growth and Change*, 53, 1907-1932. <https://doi.org/10.1111/grow.12630>.
- Daud, S. N. M., Ahmad, A. H., Khalid, A., & Azman-Saini, W. N. W. (2022). FinTech and financial stability: Threat or opportunity?. *Finance Research Letters*, 47(Part B), 1-7. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.frl.2021.102667>.
- Dorfleitner, G., Hornuf, L., Schmitt, M., & Weber, M. (2017). *FinTech in Germany*. Cham, Switzerland: Springer International Publishing.
- EBF. (2015). *The Digital Transformation of Banks and the Digital Single Market* (EBF Discussion Paper Nr. 015782). Brüssel: European Banking Federation.
- El Khamlichi, A., Sannajust, A., & Sarkar, K. (2014). Islamic equity indices: Insight and comparison with conventional counterparts. *Bankers, Markets and Investors*, (130), 69-80.
- Financial Stability Board. (2017). *Financial Stability Implications from Fintech: Supervisory and Regulatory Issues that Merit Authorities' Attention*. Available at: <http://www.fsb.org/wpcontent/uploads/R270617.pdf>. Accessed on 15 September 2023.
- Financial Stability Board. (2023). *FinTech*. Financial Stability Board. Available at: <https://www.fsb.org/work-of-the-fsb/financial-innovation-and-structural-change/fintech/>. Accessed on 14 October 2023.
- Fuster, A., Plosser, M., Schnabl, P., & Vickery, J. (2019). The role of technology in mortgage lending. *The Review of Financial Studies*, 32(5), 1854-1899. <https://doi.org/10.1093/rfs/hhz018>.
- Geng, H., Guo, P., & Cheng, M. (2023). The dark side of bank FinTech: Evidence from a transition economy. *Economic Analysis and Policy*, 80, 1811-1830. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.eap.2023.11.020>.
- Gheeraert, L., & Weill, L. (2015). Does Islamic banking development favor macroeconomic efficiency? Evidence on the Islamic finance-growth nexus. *Economic Modelling*, 47, 32-39. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.econmod.2015.02.012>.

- Goldstein, I., Jiang, W., & Karolyi, G. A. (2019). To FinTech and beyond. *The Review of Financial Studies*, 32(5), 1647-1661. <https://doi.org/10.1093/rfs/hhz025>.
- Güçlü, F. (2018). *İslami Hisse Senedi Piyasaları ile Geleneksel Hisse Senedi Piyasaları Üzerine Karşılaştırmalı Bir Analiz: A.B.D., İngiltere, Malezya ve Türkiye Örneği*. Doktora Tezi, Karabük Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Karabük.
- Güçlü, F., & Kılıç, M. (2020). İslami finansın dünyadaki gelişimi ve İslami finansa yön veren uluslararası kuruluşlar üzerine bir inceleme. *Uluslararası Yönetim İktisat ve İşletme Dergisi*, 16(1), 75-91. <https://doi.org/10.17130/ijmeb.700891>.
- HM Treasury. (2016). *UK FinTech: On the Cutting Edge - An Evaluation of the International FinTech sector*. London: Ernst & Young LLP. Available at: <https://euagenda.eu/upload/publications/untitled-107589-ea.pdf>. Accessed on 09 October 2023.
- Hou, X., Gao, Z., & Wang, Q. (2016). Internet finance development and banking market discipline: Evidence from China. *Journal of Financial Stability*, 22, 88-100. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jfs.2016.01.001>.
- Imerman, M. B., & Fabozzi, F. J. (2020). Cashing in on innovation: A taxonomy of FinTech. *Journal of Asset Management*, 21, 167-177 (2020). <https://doi.org/10.1057/s41260-020-00163-4>.
- Iqbal, Z., & Mirakhor, A. (2011). *An Introduction to Islamic Finance: Theory and Practice*. Singapore: Wiley.
- Jucevičius, G., Jucevičienė, R., & Žigienė, G. (2021). Patterns of disruptive and sustaining innovations in Fintech: A diversity of emerging landscape. 2021 *IEEE International Conference on Technology and Entrepreneurship, ICTE 2021*. <https://doi.org/10.1109/ICTE51655.2021.9584486>.
- Kalaycı, İ. (2013). Katılım bankacılığı: Mali kesimde nasıl bir seçenek?. *Uluslararası Yönetim İktisat ve İşletme Dergisi*, 9(19), 51-74.
- Kettell, B. (2011). *Introduction to Islamic Banking and Finance*. Wiltshire: Wiley.
- Laahanen, S., Yrjana, E., Martikainen, M., & Lehner, M. (2019). FinTechs: Their value promises and disruptive potential. *ACRN Oxford Journal of Finance and Risk Perspectives*, 8, 59-70.
- Lai, K. P. Y., & Samers, M. (2021). Towards an economic geography of FinTech. *Progress in Human Geography*, 45(4), 720-739. <https://doi.org/10.1177/0309132520938461>.

- Laidroo, L., & Avarmaa, M. (2020) The role of location in FinTech formation. *Entrepreneurship & Regional Development*, 32(7-8), 555-572. <https://doi.org/10.1080/08985626.2019.1675777>.
- Lawrence, D. (2014). *When Startups and Financial Hubs Collide: FinTech Developments in the Startup Nation*. [Company weblog: Our Crowd]. June 2014 [Online]. Available at: <http://blog.ourcrowd.com/index.php/2014/06/30/when-startups-and-financial-hubs-collide-fintech-developments-in-the-startup-nation>. Accessed on 15 July 2023.
- Lee, I., & Shin, Y. J. (2018). Fintech: Ecosystem, business models, investment decisions, and challenges. *Business Horizons*, 61(1), 35-46. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.bushor.2017.09.003>.
- Li, L., Gao, W., & Gu, W. (2023). Fintech, bank concentration and commercial bank profitability: Evidence from Chinese urban commercial banks. *Finance Research Letters*, 57, 1-7. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.frl.2023.104234>.
- Mackenzie, A. (2015). The FinTech revolution. *London Business School Review*, 26(3), 50-53. <https://doi.org/10.1111/2057-1615.12059>.
- Melnychenko, S., Volosovych, S., & Baraniuk, Y. (2020). Dominant ideas of financial technologies in digital banking. *Baltic Journal of Economic Studies*, 6(1), 92-99. <https://doi.org/10.30525/2256-0742/2020-6-1-92-99>.
- Merello, P., Barberá, A., & Poza, E. D. L. (2022). Is the sustainability profile of FinTech companies a key driver of their value?. *Technological Forecasting and Social Change*, 174, 1-11. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.techfore.2021.121290>.
- Navaretti, G. B., Calzolari, G., & Pozzolo, A. F. (2017). FinTech and banks: Friends or foes?. *European Economy Banks, Regulation, and the Real Sector*, (2), 9-30.
- Omar, M. A., Abduh, M., & Sukmana, R. (2013). *Fundamentals of Islamic Money and Capital Markets*. Singapore: Wiley.
- Philippon, T. (2017). *The FinTech Opportunity*. BIS Working Papers (No 655), Monetary and Economic Department, August.
- Pollari, I. (2016). The rise of Fintech opportunities and challenges. *The Journal of the Securities Institute of Australia*, (3), 15-21.
- Sardana, V., & Singhania, S. (2018). Digital technology in the realm of banking: A review of literature. *International Journal of Research in Finance and Management*, 1(2), 28-32.
- Schindler, J. (2017). *FinTech and Financial Innovation: Drivers and Depth*. Finance and Economics Discussion Series 2017-081. Washington: Board

- of Governors of the Federal Reserve System, <https://doi.org/10.17016/FEDS.2017.081>.
- Stulz, R. M. (2022). FinTech, BigTech, and the future of banks. *Journal of Applied Corporate Finance*, 34(1), 106-117. <https://doi.org/10.1111/jacf.12492>.
- Syed Ali, S. (2008). Islamic capital markets: Current state and developmental challenges. In S. Syed Ali (Ed.), *Islamic Capital Markets: Products, Regulation and Development* (pp. 1-19). Jeddah: Islamic Development Bank.
- Şekkeli, F. E., & Güçlü, F. (2023). Katılım bankalarının finansal performanslarının entropi tabanlı gri ilişkisel analiz (Gia) yöntemiyle değerlendirilmesi. *Tesam Akademi Dergisi*, 10(2), 489-511. <http://dx.doi.org/10.30626/tesamakademi.1253985>.
- Thakor, A. V. (2012). Incentives to innovate and financial crises. *Journal of Financial Economics*, 103(1), 130-148. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jfineco.2011.03.026>.
- Thakor, A. V. (2020). Fintech and banking: What do we know?. *Journal of Financial Intermediation*, 41, 1-13. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jfi.2019.100833>.
- Türcan, T. (2010). Şeriat. *Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı İslam Ansiklopedisi* (pp. 571-574). Ankara: Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı Yayınları.
- Vasiljeva, T., & Lukanavo, K. (2016). Commercial banks and fintech companies in the digital transformation: Challenges for the future. *Journal of Business Management*, (11), 25-33.
- Vives, X. (2017). The impact of fintech on banking. *European Economy*, (2), 97-105.
- Vives, X. (2019). Digital disruption in banking. *Annual Review of Financial Economics*, 11(1), 243-272. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-financial-100719-120854>.
- Wang, Y., Xiuping, S., & Zhang, Q. (2021). Can fintech improve the efficiency of commercial banks? —An analysis based on big data. *Research in International Business and Finance*, 55, 1-9. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.ribaf.2020.101338>.
- Wilamowicz, A. (2019). The great FinTech disruption: InsurTech. *Banking and Finance Law Review*, 34(2), 215-238.
- Xiang, X., Lina, Z., Yun, W., & Chengxuan, H. (2017). China's path to FinTech development. *European Economy: Banks, Regulation, and the Real Sector*, 3(2), 143-159.

- Yanpar, A. (2015). *İslâmi Finans: İlkeler, Araçlar ve Kurumlar*. İstanbul: Scala Yayıncılık.
- Zhang, Y., Ye, S., Liu, J., & Du, L. (2023). Impact of the development of FinTech by commercial banks on bank credit risk. *Finance Research Letters*, 55(Part A), 1-8. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.frl.2023.103857>.
- Zhu, C. (2019). Big data as a governance mechanism. *The Review of Financial Studies*, 32(5), 2021-2061. <https://doi.org/10.1093/rfs/hhy081>.

CHAPTER 6

DETERMINANTS OF DEMAND FOR HEALTH SERVICES: THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE

NURBAY SEY¹

Abstract

In this study, theoretical and empirical studies on the demand for healthcare services are evaluated. In the study, it is emphasized that the demand for health has different characteristics from other goods and services and these differences are presented with the help of graphs. In the study, Ronald Anderson's "Behavioral Model" and Michael Grossman's "Human Capital Model", which provide a comprehensive theoretical analysis on the demand for health services, are evaluated. In addition, empirical studies conducted with different variables to determine the demand for health services were evaluated. As a result of these evaluations, in the conclusion section of the study, it is revealed that the determinant of health demand is not only disease, but also variables such as income and health supply create health demand. The study also emphasized that health policies can significantly affect the demand for health. In this respect, it has been evaluated that health demand can increase even without need and it has been emphasized that policies should be developed to ensure control in health demand in order to prevent disruption in health supply.

Key Words: Healthcare Demand, Healthcare System, Health Economics, Anderson's Behavioral Model, Human Capital Theory

Sağlık Hizmetleri Talebinin Belirleyicileri: Teorik ve Ampirik Literatür

Özet

Bu çalışmada sağlık hizmetleri talebini belirlemeye yönelik olarak yapılmış olan teorik ve ampirik çalışmalar değerlendirilmiştir. Çalışmada sağlık talebinin diğer mal ve hizmetlerden farklı özellikler taşıdığına vurgu yapılmış ve bu farklılıklar grafikler yardımıyla ortaya konmuştur. Çalışmada sağlık talebi

¹ Res. Assist. Dr., Bolu Abant İzzet Baysal University/ Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Economics, Bolu/ Turkey
seynurbay@ibu.edu.tr ORCID: 0000-0003-4125-8297

üzerine kapsamlı bir teorik analiz sunan Ronald Anderson'un "Davranışsal Modeli" ve Michael Grossman'ın "Beşerî Sermaye Modeli" teorileri incelenmiştir. Bunun yanında bu çalışma kapsamında sağlık hizmeti talebini belirlemeye yönelik farklı değişkenlerle yapılan ampirik çalışmalar da değerlendirilmiştir. Bu değerlendirmeler sonucunda; sağlık talebini belirleyen etkenin sadece hastalık olmadığı, gelir, sağlık arzı gibi değişkenlerin de sağlık talebi yarattığı ortaya konmuştur. Yine çalışmada sağlık politikalarının da de sağlık talebini önemli ölçüde etkileyebildiğine vurgu yapılmıştır. Bu açıdan sağlık talebinin ihtiyaç olmadan da artabileceği değerlendirilmiştir ve bu durum dikkate alınarak sağlık arzında aksamama yaşanmaması adına sağlık talebinde kontrolün sağlanmasına yönelik politikalar geliştirilmesi gerektiği vurgulanmıştır.

Anahtar Kelimeler: Sağlık Hizmetleri Talebi, Sağlık Sistemi, Sağlık Ekonomisi, Anderson'un Davranışsal Modeli, Beşerî Sermaye Teorisi

1.Introduction

With increasing population has led to significant growth in demand for healthcare goods and services. This growth poses challenges in terms of escalating health expenditures and potential supply shortages. Therefore, in order to make effective plans in health economics, it is crucial to accurately identify the factors influencing health demand. This study aims to examine theoretical and empirical studies conducted to make healthcare demand more predictable. It is aimed that researchers who want to conduct studies in this field can both determine the variables and compare the results.

In this direction, in the first part of the study, the demand for healthcare services is defined, and the emergence of consumer preferences between healthcare services and other goods and services is explained with the help of graphics. In this section, the change in demand for healthcare goods and services due to income changes is demonstrated through graphics, showing that the demand for healthcare services is less affected by a decrease in income compared to other goods and services.

In the second part of the study, the "Behavioral Model" developed by Ronald Anderson and the "Human Capital Theory" developed by Michael Grossman were presented. In these theories, which are among the important studies in terms of theoretical literature, it is revealed that the determinants of health expenditures are not only the need for health. Based on Anderson's thesis, it was emphasized that increases in health supply can also create demand for health. In the Grossman model, it is emphasized that the demand for health is not only consumption but

also investment. Therefore, at this point, it was revealed that the demand for healthcare services has different characteristics from other goods and services.

In the third part of the study, empirical studies on the determination of the demand for healthcare services and their results are evaluated. In this direction, income, demography, technology and diversification of health services, health resources, life expectancy at birth, cigarette and alcohol consumption, morbidity rate, health system and health insurance system variables are analyzed separately.

In the concluding section of the study, it is highlighted that there are numerous factors influencing the demand for healthcare services, and the demands are not solely derived from health needs. Considering the importance of meeting compulsory health demands in terms of public health, inadequate supply of health services is an important problem. In order for the supply of health services to meet the demand for health services, it is emphasized that the supply of health services should be planned correctly.

2. Demand in Healthcare Services

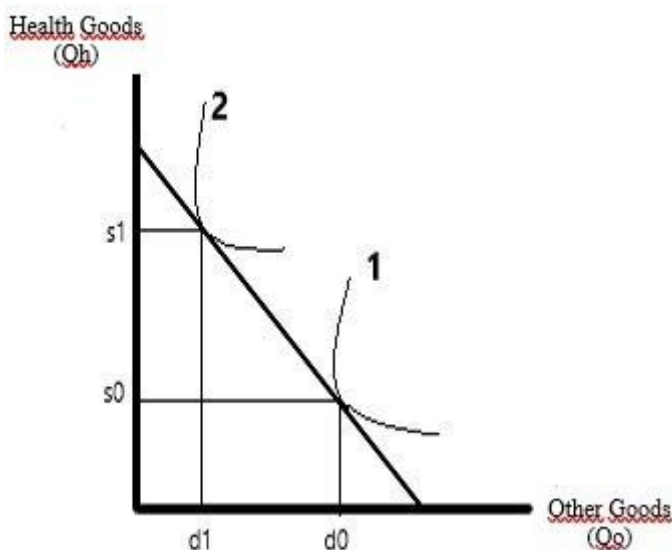
In the healthcare service market, demand occurs in three ways: demand for preventive healthcare services, demand for curative healthcare services, and demand for rehabilitative healthcare services (Mills and Gilson, 1988). Additionally, there may be health demands for information and consultation purposes. However, in reality, what the patient demands is not these services but rather to be healthy. In this sense, the demand for healthcare goods and services is a derived demand (Grossman, 1972'a; Grossman, 1972b; Folland, Goodman, and Stano, 2016).

Derived demand is an intermediate good or service that arises as a result of the demand for different good or service (Marshall, 1890). In this sense, consuming a healthcare service may not always mean maximizing utility for the consumer. For the consumer to maximize utility, the illness needs to be cured. Therefore, in such a situation, the individual lacks complete information about consumption that would maximize utility. In the face of derived demand, the individual may pay the desired fee by the supplying party, but the real demand may not be fulfilled after treatment, meaning the person may not have recovered. In this respect, the demand for health differs from other goods and services (Arrow, 1963).

The other characteristics that distinguish the demand for healthcare services from other goods and services can be listed as follows: healthcare service demand is often non-deferrable, irregularly demanded, unpredictable, a compulsory demand, there is no substitution for the demanded service, and the demand is irrational.

In healthcare markets, unlike other markets, the consumer is willing to pay all of its disposable income for the good demands. Because, under the assumption that the consumer demands two goods, one of which is healthcare demand, it can be said that the healthcare demand will dominate and the indifference curve between the two goods will tend towards the health good. This situation may raise the equilibrium price higher than normal (Wagstaff, 1986).

Figure 1: Budget Line and Indifference Curves



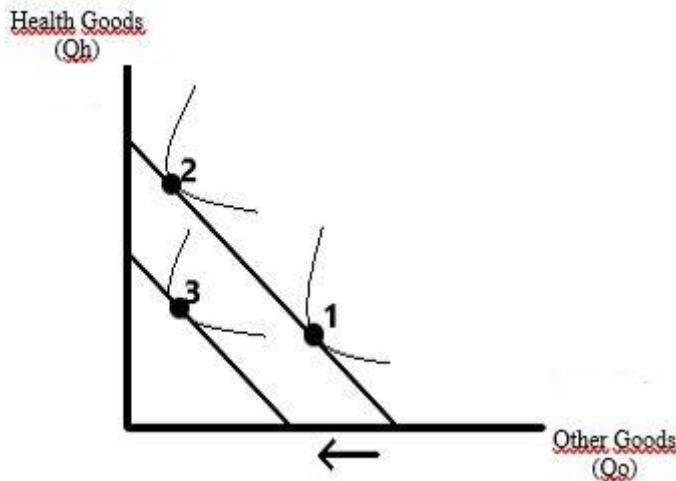
Source: (Phelps, 1976)

Figure 1 shows the individual's budget line and indifference curves. According to this, the individual is initially in equilibrium at the point where the budget line intersects the first indifference curve. Here, the individual consumes s_0 amount of healthcare goods and d_0 amount of other goods. However, as the individual's health deteriorates, the demand for healthcare goods increases. Therefore, since the individual demands more of the health good with the same budget, it has been to reduce the amount of the other good. Thus, the new equilibrium occurs at the intersection of the second indifference curve and the budget curve. Here, the individual consumes more of the healthcare good and less of the other good.

Loss of health may also reduce an individual's income. In such a case, the budget line and the indifference curve shift to the left and the total utility of the individual decreases. As health improves, an individual may work more to

increase their income (Phelps, 1976). Figure 2 shows the change in an individual's consumption due to a decrease in income as a result of the loss of health.

Figure 2: Changes in Equilibrium Due to Decrease in Income



Source: (Phelps, 1976 p.92)

If an individual had lost their health but not experienced a loss of income, it would have been expected for the equilibrium point to shift from 1 to 2. This is because an individual who has lost their health would demand more healthcare goods. However, losing health can also lead to a loss of income. Therefore, in such a situation, the budget line shifts to the left, and at the new equilibrium point, despite a decrease in the amount consumed of other goods, the demand for healthcare goods increases, resulting in the current equilibrium point being at 3. Compared to the initial situation, there is less consumption of other goods, and the overall utility decreases. However, despite the loss of income, the individual consumes more healthcare goods in the second case than in the first case.

In conclusion, healthcare services become a necessary good in case of need, due to the lack of substitutes, and they become an indispensable preference compared to other goods and services. In such cases, the demand for healthcare services often maintains its priority. In fact, if the demand for healthcare services is not met, the benefit from other goods also decreases. Furthermore, the mutual causality between health and income contributes to the preference for health goods. Ultimately, meeting the demand for health not only protects health but also preserves income.

3. Healthcare Demand Theories

There are many theoretical and empirical studies to determine the factors affecting the demand for health services. However, the most comprehensive among these studies are the "Behavioral Model" developed by Ronald Anderson and the "Human Capital Theory" model developed by Michael Grossman.

3.1. Anderson's Behavioral Model

Anderson's behavioral model of health services utilization provides a theoretical framework for understanding access to and utilization of health services, identifying factors that influence an individual's decision to use or not use current health services. Andersen strives to create a model that determines conditions facilitating or hindering people's utilization of health services. This model is flexible, offering a robust analytical structure for discussion, and its variables are testable and applicable in various locations.

According to Anderson's Behavioral Model, health demand is fundamentally driven by three factors: genetic factors, environmental factors, and health needs. The determinants of the demand for health services arising from genetic factors are determined by the age, education, gender, culture.

The determinants of the demand for health care arising from environmental factors are the physical characteristics of the environment in which the individual lives, the presence of hospitals in the environment, the individual's free time, income and insurance coverage. Demand for health based on need arises as a result of an individual's illness, as determined by doctors (Andersen, 1995).

In this context, according to Anderson's Behavioral Model, the demand for health services is not solely derived from an individual's illness; external factors can also influence this demand. Furthermore, considering the presence of hospitals as a determinant of health demand in the Anderson model, it can be said that the hypothesis in this model emphasizes that health supply will generate health demand.

3.2. Grossman's Human Capital Theory

Grossman's "Human Capital Theory" model considers health as a capital stock. In this regard, Grossman's theory of health demand differs from other theories. According to Grossman, in the healthcare market, individuals do not demand the product they purchase but rather the benefit they derive from it. Therefore, healthcare services are considered intermediate and investment goods that meet individuals' demands. In this sense, the demand for health is considered a derived demand (Grossman 1972a, 1972b).

According to the theory, individuals are born with a certain capital stock (health), but this stock depreciates as they age. To compensate for this depreciation, investments in health are necessary, such as exercise, diet, proper nutrition, avoiding smoking, and treatment. These investments are crucial for preserving utility and income. So according to the theory, health is demanded both as a consumption and an investment good.

Healthcare demanded as an investment good is based on the idea that individuals need to preserve their health to avoid income loss. When individuals lose their health, there is a decrease in their working functions, leading to a reduction in their incomes. In this sense, health demanded to prevent income loss is considered an investment demand (Grossman, 1999).

Unlike other healthcare demand theories, Grossman's theory of healthcare demand is not limited to the treatment process but continues throughout life. According to the theory, the desire to stay healthy, such as fruit consumption or maintaining a healthy diet, is also a derived demand. The desire to stay healthy is not only demanded when one is ill but is a continuous demand. As a result of this demand, individuals make choices among various goods and health-related demands throughout their lives. These choices vary depending on factors such as education, age, and income. As income, age, and education increase, the demand for health also increases.

As a result, Grossman considered the demand for health as both investment and consumption demand and revealed that the demand for health continues throughout life and is directly proportional to income, education and age. Grossman's theory has been adopted by many health economists and the study has been recognized as one of the most important studies on health demand (Folland, Goodman and Stano, 2016).

4. Determinants of Healthcare Demand

In the theoretical or empirical literature, there are many variables considered to have an impact on healthcare demand. However, the most frequently used variables are; income, demofgrafy, technology and diversification of health services, health resources, life expectancy at birth, health status, morbidity rate, health insurance, and health system variables. In this section of the study, each of these variables has been examined separately.

4.1. Income

Both theoretical and empirical studies have revealed that income is the most important determinant of health expenditures. There are two main reasons why income is expected to increase health expenditures. The first reason is based on

the assumption that health goods and services are normal goods. Accordingly, as income increases, it is expected to raise the health expenditures. Being healthy enhances the individual's utility in life. Therefore, individuals redirect their increased income towards health demands to derive more pleasure from life (Phelps 1976).

The second reason for income increasing healthcare demand is the consideration of health as a significant component of human capital and the categorization of health expenditures as investment expenditures. Michael Grossman, who has conducted important studies on health demand, emphasizes that income is earned only when the individual is healthy and argues that health expenditures are an investment expenditure in this regard. In this sense, an increase in income is expected to also turn into investments (Grossman 1972a). However, Grossman points out that this relationship is mutual and that health expenditures also contribute to increasing national income. Indeed, studies show that an increase in health expenditures leads to development in human capital, resulting in increased productivity in production (Canbay and Kırca, 2022; Saleem, Sarwar, Sultan, and Ali, 2022).

In conclusion, as GDP per capita increases, both private and public health expenditures are expected to increase. However, the rate of this increase varies for low, middle, and high-income countries. The determining factor here is the income elasticity of health expenditures (Newhouse, 1977).

In many low-income countries, health expenditures are largely carried out by international voluntary organizations, and the ratio of public and private health expenditures to total health expenditures remains less than 50% (Ke, Saksena, and Holly, 2011). The rate of increase in GDP in these countries does not reflect in health expenditures. Chen, Clarke, and Roy (2013) attribute this to the inadequacy of economic resources in underdeveloped countries. Even if there is an increase in national income in these countries, this increase may be directed towards different sectors requiring urgent investment.

At this point, it would be useful to look at empirical studies on the relationship between healthcare demand and income. Aboubacar and Xu (2017) examined the relationship between the increase in national income and health expenditures in Sub-Saharan African countries between 1995 and 2014. They found the existence of a relationship between these two variables but emphasized that this relationship is not strong. The study also reveals that the income elasticity of health expenditures in Sub-Saharan African countries is low and accordingly, healthcare goods and services are not luxuries but necessities in those countries.

Similarly, Gaag and Stimac (2008) conducted a cross-sectional analysis for 175 countries in 2004. They measured the income elasticity of health

expenditures for these 175 countries as 1.09 and concluded that healthcare services are a luxury goods. The study also examined elasticity by regions and found that the elasticity measured in the Middle East was 0.83, while it was 1.197 in OECD countries. Thus, the study suggested that healthcare goods and services are a luxury goods in high-income countries and a necessity goods in low-income countries.

However, Erdil and Yetkiner (2009) reached opposite results in their study. They examined the relationship between health expenditures and national income in a causality framework using the Granger Panel Data method. In the study, which used data from 75 countries with low, middle, and high incomes, they concluded that an increase in national income increases health expenditures more in low and middle-income countries than in high-income countries. The reason for this situation is explained by the fact that both private and public health expenditure rates are already high in countries with high GDP per capita. In these countries, investments are directed towards health technology as the current health supply is sufficient (Herwartz and Theilen, 2003). Healthcare demand in these countries is oriented towards luxury health needs such as plastic surgery and hair transplantation (Bilig, Chen, Lu, Chung, & Sears, 2020).

In contrast, empirical studies covering developed countries have measured the income elasticity of health demand as greater than 1 by some researchers and less than 1 by others. Mehrara, Musai, and Amiri (2010) conducted a study in 16 OECD countries between 1993 and 2007 to measure the impact of national income on health expenditures. They found that the elasticity of health expenditures was greater than 1, thus indicating that health expenditures are a luxury goods in OECD countries.

Another study by Lee, Oh, and Meng in 2019 examined data from 14 OECD countries between 1960 and 1997. In this study, the elasticity of health expenditures was found to be greater than 1 in 13 out of 14 OECD countries, indicating that healthcare goods and services are luxury goods in developed countries.

A long-term study by Baltagi and Moscone in 2010 analyzed data from 20 OECD countries between 1971 and 2004. The study used per capita health expenditures as the dependent variable, and the independent variables were GDP per capita, the share of public expenditures in total expenditures, and the dependent population rate. The study also emphasized that many of the variables determining health expenditures and health expenditures themselves are non-stationary, and therefore the relationship between these variables can only emerge in the long run.

Dreger and Reimers (2005) reached similar results to the study of Baltagi and Moscone. They examined data from 21 OECD countries between 1975 and 2001 using the Panel Cointegration method. In the study, the ratio of health expenditures to national income was used as the dependent variable and independent variables was national income, the elderly ratio, death rate, and life expectancy at birth. The results of the study revealed that the income elasticity of health expenditures is less than 1 and that national income is not the only determinant of health expenditures.

Di Matteo and Di Matteo (1998) calculated the income elasticity of healthcare goods and services in the Canadian provinces between 1965 and 1991 as less than 1. Similarly, Freeman (2003) found that the income elasticity of healthcare goods and services in the United States' states between 1966 and 1998 was less than 1, indicating that health goods and services are a necessity.

Similar conclusions were reached by Blomqvist and Carter in 1997 and Rana, Alam and Gow in 2020. According to these studies, elasticity is less than 1 in developed countries, and therefore, healthcare goods and services are necessity goods in these countries. In conclusion, both in developed and developing countries, the most important determinant of health expenditures is income. Income influences both the supply and demand of health goods and services.

4.2. Demography

Another significant determinant of health expenditures is the age distribution of the population. In studies examining the determinants of health demands, the population variable commonly used is the ratio of the population aged 60 or 65 and over to the population aged 5 or 15 and under. In particular, the fact that the elderly population requires more intensive health services leads to an increase in health expenditures. Studies in the literature also support this conclusion.

Hosaya (2004) conducted a study using Panel Regression analysis to determine the determinants of health expenditures in 25 OECD countries between 1985 and 2006. The study examined variables such as national income, the ratio of the population under 15 years old, the ratio of the population 65 and over, the number of hospital beds per patient, the employment rate of women, unemployment rate, and the ratio of public health expenditures to private health expenditures. The study concluded that the most important factor affecting health expenditures is age. Furthermore, it was found that an increase in the elderly population ratio increases health costs, while an increase in the population under 15 years old reduces costs.

Similarly, Di Matteo (2005) demonstrated the strong relationship between national income, age, and health expenditures in the United States between 1980

and 1998 and in Canada between 1975 and 2000. The regression model used in the study identified the population aged 65 and over as the most influential age group affecting health expenditures. Blomqvist and Carter (1997) also showed that the population aged 65 and over significantly influences health expenditures in 24 OECD countries between 1960 and 1991.

Furuoka, Yee, Kok, Hoque, and Munir (2011) with using Panel Regression method, found that national income and age are the two most important variables determining healthcare demands in 12 Asian countries between 1985 and 2006. Dreger and Reimers (2005) reached a similar conclusion, finding that an increase in the elderly population leads to an increase in healthcare demands.

Feng, Watt, Charlesworth, Marsden, Roberts, and Sussex conducted a study in 2017 using the panel VAR method to determine the determinants of health expenditures in 18 developed OECD countries. The study covered the years 1982-2012 and used variables such as national income, the proportion of the population aged 65 and over to the total population, death rates, average personal income, drug development expenditures, and health prices. The study indicated that drug development expenditures represent technology. It showed a strong long-term relationship between per capita income and health expenditures. Additionally, the study revealed that the population aged 65 and over increases health expenditures in the long term.

Although not extensively emphasized in empirical studies, the impact of population structure on health expenditures also depends on the development of countries. In developed and developing countries, an increase in the elderly population ratio leads to a significant increase in health expenditures. In underdeveloped countries, an increased elderly population ratio comparatively increases health expenditures less (Ke, Saksena, and Holly, 2011).

In conclusion, many empirical studies have demonstrated the existence of a relationship between the age distribution of the population and health expenditures in both developed and developing countries. Therefore, considering the age distribution of the population as an important factor influencing health expenditures would not be incorrect.

4.3. Technology and Diversification of Healthcare Services

The accumulation of knowledge in healthcare and the diversification of healthcare services due to technological advancements lead to an increase in healthcare demands. The first significant study addressing the impact of technological development on health demands was conducted by Newhouse in 1992.

Newhouse emphasized that technological development will increase health expenditures. According to Newhouse, even if income increases, the lack of development in health technology will not create a demand for health, which means that health demands will remain constant despite the increase in income. Therefore, according to Newhouse, an increase in the demand for health can only occur as a result of the development of health technology and the diversification of health services. The study also mentions the difficulty of measuring health technology. Newhouse has suggested that the number of high-tech medical devices such as dialysis and endoscopy can be used as a variable to measure technology in health (Newhouse, 1992).

There are also studies that measure technological development using different variables. Okunade and Murthy (2002), based on Newhouse's work, conducted a study to understand whether technological development affects healthcare demands and used Research and Development (R&D) expenditures as a variable to measure technological development. Feng, Watt, Charlesworth, Marsden, Roberts, and Sussex (2017) represented technology with using pharmaceutical expenditures as a variable. Time trend variables are also among the variables used in different studies to represent technology (Atella and Marini, 2006; Di Matteo, 2005).

In conclusion, the assumption that there is a relationship between technological development and healthcare demands is widely accepted in the literature. However, data used to measure technology are only available in developed countries. Therefore, the impact of technology on healthcare demands has not been extensively tested for underdeveloped and developing countries. Empirical studies have predominantly focused on developed countries (Ke, Saksena, and Holly, 2011).

Indeed, the study by Okunade, Karakuş, and Okeke (2004) covers developed OECD countries, concluding that healthcare demands and technological development move together. Similarly, the study by Atella and Marini (2006) also covers developed countries, focusing on the impact of technology-related healthcare demands in 20 OECD countries between 1960 and 2000, revealing that technological development transforms healthcare goods from a luxury to a necessity in developed countries.

4.4. Healthcare Resources

Milton Roemer, who associated the "supply creates its own demand" law with healthcare expenditures, proposed the hypothesis that "in an insured population, a hospital bed built is a bed filled" (Shain and Roemer, 1959). Later recognized as Roemer's Law, this perspective has been included in the study of many health

economists. The theory is based on the assumption that the created supply will turn into demand even if there is no actual need for it (Delamater, Messina, Grady, WinklerPrins, and Shortridge, 2013).

Empirical studies have also found results indicating that an increase in the number of hospital beds per capita leads to an increase in the number of nights spent in the hospital. Feldstein, for example, determined that a 10% increase in hospital beds led to a 5.3% increase in nights spent in the hospital. Similarly, Newhouse and Phelps measured this rate at 4.6%, Gindsburg and Korets at 4.2%, and Chiswick at 8.5% (Taroni, 2001).

It is also expected that other resources in the hospital will also generate healthcare demand and increase healthcare expenditures. Therefore, in this sense, variables such as the number of hospital beds per capita, the number of doctors, nurses, healthcare workers, healthcare equipment, etc., are considered determinants of healthcare demands (Phi, 2017). Akça, Sönmez, and Yılmaz (2017) applied a cross-sectional analysis for 35 OECD countries and found that the number of hospitals is a significant determinant of healthcare demands. Saleem, Sarwar, Sultan, and Ali (2022) have found that health infrastructure investments play a significant role in healthcare expenditures in underdeveloped and developing countries.

4.5. Life Expectancy at Birth

There is a strong relationship between life expectancy at birth and health expenditures. There are many studies in the literature to measure the existence and impact of this relationship. In these studies, life expectancy at birth or mortality rates are used in addition to the health expenditure variable. Almost all of the studies have found a positive relationship between life expectancy at birth and health expenditures. However, this effect differs from country to country. This difference arises depending on the health expenditure policies of the countries. Therefore, it is important to examine the relationship between these two variables in order to produce the right health expenditure policy (Deshpande, Kumar and Ramaswami, 2014).

There are studies indicating that the relationship between health expenditures and life expectancy at birth varies depending on the developmental differences among countries. Jaba, Balan, and Robu (2014) conducted a study using data from 175 countries between 1995 and 2010. According to this study, the relationship between health expenditures and life expectancy at birth is stronger in middle-income countries compared to other income groups.

Similarly, Poullier, Hernandez, Kawabata, and Savedoff (2002) examined the relationship between health expenditures and life expectancy at birth in 191

countries based on income groups, using data from 1998. The study found that the relationship is strong in low-income countries and weak in high-income countries. Additionally, the study revealed that despite low-income countries making similar health expenditures, the effectiveness of these expenditures varies. Thus, the study concluded that public health policies significantly influence the effectiveness of health expenditures. In conclusion, while the level of impact varies across income groups depending on public health policies, health expenditures contribute to increasing life expectancy at birth in each income group.

4.6. Cigarette and Alcohol Consumption

The widespread use of products such as cigarette and alcohol, which negatively affect public health, contributes to the increase in diseases, and this situation is reflected in healthcare demands. Therefore, in some studies aimed at identifying the determinants of healthcare expenditures, per capita cigarette and alcohol use are used as independent variables.

Cremieux, Ouellette, and Pilon (1999) conducted a study to measure the impact of life expectancy at birth and mortality rates on healthcare demands. In this study, they found that cigarette and alcohol use shorten life expectancy at birth, and as a result, healthcare demands increase. Although the rates of cigarette and alcohol use were not directly used as variables in this study, they were considered as factors influencing healthcare expenditures.

Similarly, Venkataraman, Anbazhagan, and Anbazhagan (2019) attempted to identify factors influencing household healthcare expenditures. The study concluded that cigarette and alcohol increase healthcare expenditures. Furthermore, the study concluded that cigarette and alcohol use negatively affect human capital through their impact on health.

4.7. Morbidity Rate

The morbidity rate is the ratio of individuals affected by a specific disease in a certain geography over a specified period to the total population. The Covid-19 pandemic that emerged in 2019 serves as an example of morbidity. The morbidity rate also encompasses the proportions of individuals who have experienced diseases such as heart attacks and cancer relative to the total population. During periods when these types of diseases are prevalent, an increase in healthcare demand is naturally expected. An Empirical study, conducted by You, Wo, and Guo in 2020, have found a positive correlation between these two variables.

Dormont, Grignon, and Huber (2006) used microdata from 1992-2000 in France to test the relationship between age, morbidity rates, healthcare changes, and health expenditures and found a positive correlation between increases in healthcare demands and morbidity.

Howdon and Rice (2015) examined the relationship between age, morbidity, death rates, and healthcare expenditures by analyzing data from 40,000 patients using panel data methods. The results of the study showed a strong correlation between health expenditures and morbidity. The study also emphasized the importance of morbidity rates in explaining changes in health expenditures and suggested the development of new methods for more effective measurement of morbidity rates.

Hansen, Reinecke, and Schmere (2021) examined the impact of the Covid-19 pandemic on health expenditures. The study found that Covid-19 increased both public healthcare expenditures and out-of-pocket health expenditures.

4.8. Health Insurance

Revenues from public health insurances are returned to the health sector in the form of expenditures. Private health insurances also cover the treatment of various diseases in return for the premiums they collect. In this sense, both public and private health insurances have a significant impact on health expenditures. However, this effect can be positive or negative.

According to the study conducted by Al-Hanawi, Mwale, and Qattan in 2021, health insurance reduces out-of-pocket spending on treatments by 2% and out-of-pocket spending on medications by 2.4%. Similarly, Jung and Streeter (2015) examined the relationship between health insurance and out-of-pocket healthcare expenditures using China's data from 1991-2006. They found that health insurance reduced out-of-pocket healthcare expenditures by 29.42%.

Tchoe and Nam (2010) conducted a study in South Korea using data from 1997-2000 and 1985-2000 to identify factors affecting health expenditures. They concluded that ownership of insurance is the most important determinant of healthcare demands. On the other hand, Wang and Lee (2018), unlike Al-Hanawi et al. (2021) and Jung et al. (2015), found that low-coverage health insurance increased both health expenditures and per capita income. However, the same study revealed that high-coverage health insurance did not bring about a change in health expenditures.

In conclusion, there is a strong relationship between health insurance and health expenditures. However, the direction and strength of this relationship vary in different studies.

4.9. Healthcare System

Factors such as the share of the government and the private sector in healthcare expenditures, the manner in which financing sources are obtained, and the coverage rates of public insurances are expected to significantly influence healthcare expenditures.

Gerdtham, Sogaard, Andersson, and Johnsson (1992) conducted a study using cross-sectional methods and data from 1987 to identify factors influencing health expenditures in 19 OECD countries. According to the study, the two most significant determinants of variations in health expenditures among OECD countries are per capita income and the implemented healthcare systems.

In contrast, Karim, Eikemo, and Bambra (2010) revealed in their studies involving 30 developed countries that healthcare systems increased life expectancy at birth in advanced countries but had a limited impact on health expenditures.

Wagstaff and Moreno-Serra (2007) conducted a study to measure the impact of financing the healthcare system through taxes or insurance premiums on health expenditures in 28 countries between 1990 and 2004. In this study, it was found that financing the healthcare system through insurance premiums increased the number of hospital visits and health expenditures.

5. Conclusion

This study presents theoretical and empirical research conducted to identify the factors determining demand in healthcare services. The aim is to provide researchers interested in predicting healthcare demand with variables they can use and results they can compare. In this context, both theoretical and empirical studies on healthcare demand are evaluated within the scope of this study. As a result of the studies analyzed, it is understood that the severity of the disease is not the only factor determining the demand for health. Factors such as income, health supply, demographics, social environment, health systems, etc. can also affect the demand for health services.

From this point of view, it can be said that the demand for healthcare services are in a structure that can turn into demand even if it is not a need. However, unlike other goods and services, basic healthcare services are compulsory goods with no alternatives. Therefore, the supply problem due to excessive demand could become an important problem in the healthcare services market. Therefore, in order to control health demands that cause an increase in non-essential demand, it is necessary to plan health supply well and prevent the health system from creating excessive demand growth.

As a result, the demand for health care is increasing day by day due to developments in income and technology, which has a positive impact on human capital variables such as life expectancy at birth. However, supply cannot always respond to this increasing demand at the same rate. Therefore, at this point, it is important to predict the demand and plan the supply accordingly that demand.

References

- Aboubacar, B., & Xu, D. (2017). The Impact of Health Expenditure on the Economic Growth in Sub-Saharan Africa. *Theoretical Economics Letters*, 7(3).
- Akça, N., Sönmez, S., & Yılmaz, A. (2017). Determinants of health expenditure in OECD countries: A decision tree model. *Pakistan Journal of Medical Sciences*, 33(6).
- Al-Hanawi, M., Mwale, M., & Qattan, A. (2021). Health Insurance and Out-Of-Pocket Expenditure on Health and Medicine: Heterogeneities along Income. *Front Pharmacol.*, 30(12).
- Andersen, R. M. (1995). Revisiting the Behavioral Model and Access to Medical Care: Does it Matter? *Journal of Health and Social Behavior*, 36(1), p. 1-10.
- Arrow, K. J. (1963). Uncertainty and the Welfare Economics of Medical Care. *American Economic Association*, 53(5), p. 941-973. <http://www.jstor.org/stable/1812044>
- Atella, V., & Marini, G. (2006). *Is health care expenditure really a luxury good? Re-assessment and new evidence based on OECD data*. OECD.
- Baltagi, B., & Moscone, F. (2010). Health care expenditure and income in the OECD reconsidered: Evidence from panel data. *Economic Modelling*, 27(4), p. 804-811.
- Bilig, J., Chen, J.-S., Lu, Y.-T., Chung, K., & Sears, E. (2020). The Economic Burden of Out-of-Pocket Expenses for Plastic Surgery Procedures. *Plast Reconstr Surg*, 145(6), p. 1541-1551.
- Blomqvist, A., & Carter, R. (1997). Is health care really a luxury? *Journal of Health Economics*, 16(2), p. 207-229.
- Canbay, Ş., & Kırca, M. (2022). Health expenditures (total, public and private) and per capita income in the BRICS+T: panel bootstrap causality analysis. *Journal of Economics, Finance and Administrative Science*.
- Chen, W., Clarke, J., & Roy, N. (2013). Health and wealth: Short panel Granger causality tests for developing countries. *The Journal of International Trade and Economic Development*, 23(6), p. 755-784.
- Cremieux, P.-Y., Ouellette, P., & Pilon, C. (1999). Health care spending as determinants of health outcomes. *Health Economics*(8), p. 627-639.
- Delamater, P., Messina, J., Grady, S., WinklerPrins, V., & Shortridge, A. (2013). Do More Hospital Beds Lead to Higher Hospitalization Rates? A Spatial Examination of Roemer's Law. *PloS one*, 8(2).
- Deshpande, N., Kumar, A., & Ramaswami, R. (2014). The Effect of National Healthcare Expenditure on Life Expectancy.

<https://smartech.gatech.edu/bitstream/handle/1853/51648/The+Effect+of+National+Healthcare+Expenditure+on+Life+Expectancy.pdf?sequence=1>

- Di Matteo, L., & Di Matteo, R. (1998). Evidence on the determinants of Canadian provincial government health expenditures: 1965–1991. *Journal of health economics*, 17(2), p. 211-228.
- Di Matteo, L. (2005). The macro determinants of health expenditure in the United States and Canada: assessing the impact of income, age distribution and time. *Health Policy*(7), p. 23-42.
- Dormont, B., Grignon, M., & Huber, H. (2006). Health expenditure growth: reassessing the threat of ageing. *Health Economics*(15), p. 947–963.
- Dreger, C., & Reimers, H.-E. (2005). Health Care Expenditures in OECD Countries: A Panel Unit Root and Cointegration Analysis. *Discussion Paper*(No. 1469).
- Erdil, E., & Yetkiner, I. (2009). The Granger-causality between health care expenditure and output: a panel data approach. *In Applied Economics*, 41(4), p. 511-518.
- Freeman, D.G. (2003). Is health care a necessity or a luxury? Pooled estimates of income elasticity from US state-level data. *Applied Economics*, 35(5), p. 495-502.
- Folland, S., Goodman, A., & Stano, M. (2016). *The Economics of Health and Health Care: Pearson New International Edition*. New York: Routledge.
- Furuoka, F., Yee, B., Kok, E., Hoque, M., & Munir, Q. (2011). What are the determinants of Health Care expenditure? Empirical results from Asian Countries. *Sunway Acad J.*, 8(12), p. 12-25.
- Gaag, J., & Stimac, V. (2008). *Toward a New Paradigm for Health Sector Development. Amsterdam Institute for International Development*.
- Gerdtham, U., Sogaard, J., Andersson, F., & Jonsson, B. (1992). An econometric analysis of health care expenditure: a cross-section study of the OECD countries. *Journal of Health Economics*(11), p. 63-84.
- Grossman, M. (1972a). *The Demand For Health; A Theoretical and Empirical Investigation*. New York: National Bureau of Economic Research.
- Grossman, M. (1972b). On the Concept of Health Capital and the Demand For Health. *Journal of Political Economy*(80), p. 223-235.
- Hansen, J., Reinecke, A., & Schmerer, H.-J. (2021). Health Expenditures and the Effectiveness of Covid-19 Prevention in International Comparison. *CESifo Working Paper No. 9069*.

- Herwartz, H., & Theilen, B. (2003). The determinants of health care expenditure: testing pooling restrictions in small samples. *Health Economics*, 12(2), p. 113-124.
- Hosaya, K. (2014). Determinants of health expenditures: Stylized facts and a new signal. *Modern Economy*, 5(13), p. 1171.
- Howdon, D., & Rice, N. (2015). *Health care expenditures, age, proximity to death and morbidity: implications for an ageing population*. New York: Centre For Health Economics.
- Jaba, E., Balana, C., & Robu, I.-B. (2014). The relationship between life expectancy at birth and health expenditures estimated by a cross-country and time-series analysis. *Emerging Markets Queries in Finance and Business*(15), p. 108-114.
- Jung, J., & Streeter, J. (2015). Does Health Insurance Decrease Health Expenditure Risk in Developing Countries? The Case of China. *Southern Economic Journal*, 82(2), p. 361-384.
- Karim, S., Eikemo, T., & Bambra, C. (2010). Welfare state regimes and population health: Integrating the East Asian welfare states. *Health Policy*(94), p. 45-53.
- Ke, X., Saksena, P., & Holly, A. (2011). The Determinants of Health Expenditure: A Country-Level Panel Data Analysis. *World Health Organizatin Working Paper*.
- Lee, H., Oh, D., & Meng, M. (2019). Stationarity and cointegration of health care expenditure and GDP: evidence from tests with smooth structural shifts. *Empirical Economics*, 57(2), p. 631-652.
- Marshall, A. (1890). *Principles of Economics*. London: Macmillan.
- Mehrara, M., Musai, M., & Amiri, H. (2010). The Relationship between Health Expenditure and GDP in OECD Countries Using PSTR. *European Journal of Economics, Finance and Administrative Sciences*(24), p. 50-58.
- Newhouse, J. P. (1977). Medical-care expenditure: a cross-national survey. *Journal of Human Resources*, 12(1), p. 115-125.
- Newhouse, J. P. (1992). Medical Care Costs: How Much Welfare Loss? *Journal of Economic Perspectives*, 6(3), s. 3-21.
- Okunade, A., & Murthy, V. (2002). Technology as a 'major driver' of health care costs: a cointegration analysis of the Newhouse conjecture. *Journal of Health Economics*, 21(1), p. 147-159.
- Okunade, A., Karakuş, M., & Okeke, C. (2004). Determinants of Health Expenditure Growth of the OECD Countries: Jackknife Resampling Plan Estimates. *Health Care Management Science*(7), p. 173-183.
- Phelps, C. (1976). *Healty Economics*. Harper Collins Publishers.

- Phi, G. (2017). Determinants of Health Expenditures in OECD Countries. Bryant University.
- Poullier, J.-P., Hernandez, P., Kawabata, K., & Savedoff, W. (2002). Patterns of Global Health Expenditures: Results for 191 Countries. *Discussion Paper*(No. 51).
- Rana, R., Alam, K., & Gow, J. (2020). Health expenditure and gross domestic product: causality analysis by income level. *International journal of health economics and management*, 20(1), p. 55-77.
- Saleem, A., Sarwar, G., Sultan, J., & Ali, Z. (2022). Determinants of Public Healthcare Investment: Cointegration and Causality Evidence from Pakistan. *Journal of Economic Impact*, 4(2), p. 1-13.
- Shain, M., & Roemer, M. (1959). Hospital costs relate to the supply of beds. *Modern Hospital*(92), s. 71–73. School of Public Health.
- Taroni, F. (2001). Roemer's effect reconsidered. *Journal of Health Services Research & Policy*, 6(1), p. 56-58.
- Tchoe, B., & Nam, S. (2010). Aging risk and health care expenditure in Korea. *International journal of environmental research and public health*, 7(8), p. 3235-3254.
- Venkataraman, S., Anbazhagan, S., & Anbazhagan, S. (2019). Expenditure on health care, tobacco, and alcohol: Evidence from household surveys in rural Puducherry. *J Family Med Prim Care*, 8(3), p. 909-913.
- Wagstaff, A. (1986). The demand for health: theory and applications. *Journal of Epidemiology and Community Health*(40), p. 1-11.
- Wang, K.-M., & Lee, &.-M. (2018). The impacts of life insurance asymmetrically on health expenditure and economic growth: dynamic panel threshold approach. *Economic Research-Ekonomska Istraživanja*, p. 440-460.
- Wagstaff, A., & Moreno-Serra, R. (2007). Europe and Central Asia's Great Post-Communist Social Health Insurance Experiment: Impacts on Health Sector and Labor Market Outcomes. *Policy Research Working Paper*(4371).
- You, H., Wo, X., & Guo, X. (2020). Distribution of COVID-19 morbidity rate in association with social and economic factors in Wuhan, China: implications for urban development. *International journal of environmental research and public health*, 17(10).

CHAPTER 7

PSYCHOANALYTICAL LEADERSHIP: INTEGRATING THEORY INTO ORGANIZATIONAL PRACTICES

ÖZGE KOCAKULA¹

Psychoanalytic Theory and Leadership: An Overview

The field of leadership theory and practice has evolved significantly over the years, with various theories and approaches being developed to better understand and enhance effective leadership (Tumaini, 2022). Transformational and visionary leadership theories have gained widespread acceptance among scholars and practitioners in the field (Sarjana, 2017). However, there is a notable gap in the literature and research when it comes to leadership practices, effectiveness, and training in the context of rapidly changing organizations. Despite the abundance of research on leadership, there has been limited exploration of the application of psychoanalytic theory to leadership and organizational practices (Longenecker & Yonker, 2013). Although psychoanalytic theory is more commonly associated with the field of psychology, it offers valuable insights and contributions to understanding leadership dynamics and behaviors (Kahn, 2016). Psychoanalytic theory, rooted in the work of Sigmund Freud, focuses on the unconscious mind and how it influences human behavior. By integrating psychoanalytic thinking into leadership and organizational practices, leaders can gain a deeper understanding of themselves and their teams. Psychodynamic and psychoanalytic approaches can provide valuable insights into the unconscious motivations, emotions, and conflicts that shape leadership behavior. These approaches can help leaders identify and address underlying issues that may be hindering their effectiveness or causing dysfunction within the organization. Furthermore, psychoanalytic theory recognizes the interplay between leaders and followers and the deep, unconscious links that exist within these relationships (Fotaki & Foroughi, 2021). By incorporating psychoanalytic principles into organizational practices, leaders can gain a more comprehensive understanding of the unconscious drives and attachments that underlie their own behavior and the behavior of their followers. This deeper understanding can lead to improved

¹ Assoc. Prof. Dr., Aydın Adnan Menderes University, Sultanhisar Vocational School, Management&Organization Department, 0970. ozgekocakula@adu.edu.tr

communication, enhanced relationships, and more effective leadership practices. Although the application of psychoanalytic theory to leadership and organizational practices is relatively unexplored, it holds great potential for improving leadership effectiveness in today's complex and dynamic organizational environments (Kahn, 2016). Psychoanalytic theory offers a unique perspective on leadership and organizational practices, emphasizing the influence of unconscious drives and attachments on behavior (Fotaki & Foroughi, 2021). Integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can provide valuable insights into the underlying motivations, emotions, and conflicts that shape leadership behavior. These insights can help leaders to better understand themselves and their teams, identify and address underlying issues that may be hindering their effectiveness, and create more cohesive and productive work environments. By using the offerings of psychoanalytic theory in leadership and organizational practices, organizations could benefit from a deeper understanding of unconscious influences on behavior, improved communication, and relationships, and ultimately, more effective leadership practices. Furthermore, the psychoanalytic approach can also shed light on collective phenomena within organizations, such as organizational politics, emotions, stories, and culture. By examining the deeper meanings of the organizational psycho-structure and interpreting data in the context of the social system, leaders can gain a better understanding of these collective phenomena and make informed decisions to promote a healthier and more productive organizational culture.

This integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can lead to a more holistic and nuanced approach to understanding and navigating the complexities of the modern workplace. Leaders who embrace psychoanalytic theories and incorporate them into their leadership practices can gain a deeper understanding of their own motivations and unconscious biases, as well as those of their team members. They can develop a heightened sense of self-awareness and empathy, enabling them to better manage conflicts, build trust, and create a supportive and collaborative work environment. Additionally, integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can help address issues related to power dynamics and narcissism. Leadership practices that are rooted in psychoanalytic principles can help leaders recognize and address their own narcissistic tendencies, as well as navigate power dynamics within the organization in a healthier and more balanced way. By incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices, organizations can foster a more introspective and emotionally intelligent approach to leadership. This approach allows leaders to

tap into the unconscious motivations and behavior patterns of themselves and their employees, leading to more effective decision-making and problem-solving. Overall, the integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices offers numerous potential benefits, including improved communication and relationships, a deeper understanding of unconscious motivations and dynamics, enhanced self-awareness and emotional intelligence in leaders, and a more productive and supportive organizational culture.

In conclusion, psychoanalytic principles offer valuable insights into the deeper psychological dynamics at play within organizations and can greatly enhance leadership and organizational practices. By recognizing and addressing unconscious motivations, biases, and power dynamics, leaders can create a healthier and more productive work environment. Incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices has the potential to bring about a more holistic and nuanced understanding of the complexities of the workplace and human behavior. These insights can then be used to inform and improve leadership strategies, decision-making processes, and overall organizational effectiveness. Psychoanalytic offerings to leadership can find their way into organizational practices by promoting self-awareness, empathy, and conflict management among leaders. Additionally, training programs and workshops can be implemented to educate leaders on the concepts and techniques of psychoanalysis, allowing them to apply these principles in their day-to-day leadership practices. Furthermore, creating a culture that values self-reflection and open dialogue can encourage the integration of psychoanalytic principles into daily organizational practices. By embracing the principles of psychoanalysis in leadership and organizational practices, organizations have the opportunity to enhance their understanding of human behavior and dynamics within the workplace. Overall, the incorporation of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices offers a unique perspective that can contribute to the improvement of communication, relationships, and overall organizational effectiveness. In conclusion, the integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices has the potential to provide valuable insights and enhance overall effectiveness.

Understanding the Psychoanalytic Approach to Leadership

The psychoanalytic approach to leadership focuses on deepening our understanding of the unconscious motivations and dynamics that influence individual and group behavior within organizations. By examining the impact of unconscious drives, early-life attachments, and defense mechanisms on leadership behavior, this approach offers valuable insights into the complexities

of human interaction and its implications for leadership. This approach acknowledges the influence of unconscious processes in shaping leadership behavior and aims to uncover hidden patterns, conflicts, and unresolved issues that may impact a leader's ability to effectively lead and engage with their team. Through the psychoanalytic approach, leaders can gain a deeper understanding of their own motivations, fears, and desires, which in turn can inform their decision making, communication style, and relationship-building strategies. Leaders who are trained in psychoanalytic principles can develop a heightened self-awareness and a better understanding of the unconscious dynamics at play within their organization. This can lead to more effective leadership practices that are grounded in a comprehensive understanding of human behavior and psychology. Additionally, the psychoanalytic approach places importance on exploring and addressing unconscious conflicts and unresolved issues within organizations.

By recognizing and working through these underlying factors, leaders can foster a healthier and more productive organizational environment. The integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices also offers a unique perspective on group dynamics. It highlights the complex interplay between leaders and followers, emphasizing the deep, unconscious connections that shape their interactions. This understanding can enhance team dynamics, foster a sense of psychological safety, and promote effective collaboration.

Furthermore, the psychoanalytic approach to leadership can provide insights into organizational phenomena such as anxiety, emotion, and trust (Hoffman, 2010). By exploring how these psychological constructs operate within the context of an organization, leaders can gain a better understanding of individual and collective responses to change, conflict, and uncertainty. This can inform the development of strategies and interventions that address these psychological dynamics, leading to more resilient and adaptable organizations. Incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can have several implications.

First, it requires leaders to have a willingness to engage in introspection and self-reflection. Second, leaders need to be open to the idea of exploring unconscious drives and attachments that may influence their behavior. Lastly, organizations must create a supportive and safe environment that encourages leaders and employees to explore their unconscious dynamics without fear of judgment or reprisal. By embracing these principles, leaders can effectively navigate complex organizational challenges and cultivate a culture of psychological well-being and growth.

Applying Psychoanalysis in Leadership Practices

Psychoanalysis offers valuable insights into leadership practices by examining the unconscious dimensions of human behavior and how they manifest in organizational settings (Fotaki & Foroughi, 2021). By delving into the unconscious motivations, desires, and conflicts of leaders and employees, psychoanalytic principles can provide a deeper understanding of their actions and patterns of behavior. This understanding can help leaders identify and address any underlying psychological issues that may be hindering their effectiveness, such as unresolved trauma, fear of failure, or deep-seated insecurities. By addressing these unconscious dynamics, leaders can leverage their strengths and overcome limitations to become more self-aware and emotionally intelligent. This increased self-awareness can lead to better decision-making, more authentic leadership styles, and the ability to effectively navigate interpersonal dynamics within the organization. In addition, psychoanalytic principles can also inform leadership development programs and practices. These programs can incorporate techniques such as individual therapy, group therapy, and personality assessments to help leaders gain a deeper understanding of themselves and how they relate to others. This comprehensive approach to leadership development can foster personal growth, enhanced communication skills, and a greater capacity for empathy and understanding. Overall, integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership practices can have numerous benefits for both leaders and organizations. It can lead to improved self-awareness, better decision-making, enhanced interpersonal skills, and a positive organizational culture that supports psychological well-being and growth.

In addition to the benefits for individual leaders, utilizing psychoanalytic principles in leadership practices can also enhance organizational effectiveness. By addressing unconscious dynamics and conflicts within the organization, leaders can identify and address systemic issues that may be hindering productivity, collaboration, and innovation. Furthermore, psychoanalytic principles can help uncover underlying patterns and dynamics that contribute to dysfunctional behaviors and toxic organizational cultures. Addressing these issues can lead to improved team dynamics, increased employee satisfaction and engagement, and a healthier work environment overall. Furthermore, psychoanalytic principles can assist in understanding the unconscious motivations and dynamics that drive organizational behavior. This understanding can inform strategies for change management, leadership succession planning, and organizational development initiatives. Overall, the incorporation of psychoanalytic principles in leadership practices offers a comprehensive and holistic approach to understanding and addressing the complexities of human

behavior within organizational settings, ultimately enhancing leadership effectiveness and organizational success. Furthermore, the application of psychoanalytic principles in leadership practices can also shed light on the underlying dynamics of power and authority within organizations. By exploring the unconscious desires and conflicts that shape leaders' behaviors, psychoanalytic principles can help identify and challenge patterns of dominance, control, and manipulation within the organization.

This can lead to a more inclusive and equitable organizational culture where power is shared, collaboration is encouraged, and the voices of all individuals are valued. Incorporating psychoanalytic principles in leadership practices can provide valuable insights into the unconscious factors that influence individual and organizational behavior. These insights can then be utilized to promote self-awareness, empathy, and emotional intelligence among leaders, fostering a supportive and psychologically healthy work environment. In addition, psychoanalytic offerings can contribute to the development of effective leadership practices by helping leaders understand and manage their own unconscious biases, anxieties, and conflicts. This can lead to more authentic and effective leadership, as leaders are better able to navigate their own internal dynamics and relate to others in a more empathetic way.

The Role of Psychoanalytic Concepts in Organizational Leadership

The incorporation of psychoanalytic concepts in organizational leadership can provide valuable insights into the unconscious motivations and dynamics that shape individual and group behavior within organizations. These insights can help leaders better understand their own behaviors and those of their team members, leading to more effective leadership strategies and improved organizational outcomes. Additionally, psychoanalytic concepts can shed light on the underlying dynamics of power and authority within organizations. This understanding can help leaders identify and address patterns of dominance, control, and manipulation that may be hindering collaboration and creating a toxic work environment. By utilizing psychoanalytic principles, leaders can foster a more inclusive and equitable organizational culture where power is shared, and the voices of all individuals are valued. Furthermore, incorporating psychoanalytic principles can promote self-awareness, emotional intelligence, and empathy among leaders, which can contribute to a supportive and psychologically healthy work environment.

Exploring Psychoanalytic Perspectives on Leadership Styles

By exploring psychoanalytic perspectives on leadership styles, organizations can gain a deeper understanding of the underlying psychological processes that shape leadership behavior. This understanding can inform the development of leadership training programs that address the unconscious drivers of leadership styles, such as the need for power, control, or approval. Organizations can also utilize psychoanalytic concepts to examine the dynamics of leadership and followership. This can involve exploring the unconscious dynamics that influence followers' perceptions and responses to leaders, as well as the unconscious conflicts that leaders themselves may bring to their role. By incorporating psychoanalytic perspectives into leadership practices, organizations can create a more holistic and nuanced approach to leadership development. This approach recognizes that effective leadership goes beyond skill and competency and encompasses the psychological and emotional dimensions of leading others. By acknowledging and addressing these unconscious dynamics, organizations can create a more psychologically healthy and supportive environment for both leaders and followers.

Potential Benefits of Psychoanalytic Approaches to Leadership

By acknowledging and addressing these unconscious dynamics, organizations can create a more psychologically healthy and supportive environment for both leaders and followers. Utilizing psychoanalytic approaches in leadership can yield several valuable benefits for both individual leaders and the organization as a whole. By delving into psychoanalytic principles, leaders can gain deeper insights into their own unconscious motivations, desires, and fears. This heightened self-awareness can lead to a more authentic leadership style, as leaders become more attuned to their true selves and can lead from a place of authenticity. Moreover, this authenticity can inspire trust and loyalty among team members and foster a culture of openness and transparency within the organization.

Improved Decision-Making and Interpersonal Dynamics

Understanding the unconscious drivers of behavior can equip leaders with a better understanding of their own decision-making processes and how they influence interpersonal relationships. This knowledge can lead to more informed decision-making and the ability to navigate complex interpersonal dynamics with a greater degree of empathy and understanding. As a result, leaders can build stronger, more cohesive teams and foster a culture of collaboration and respect.

Addressing Systemic Issues and Organizational Dysfunctions

Psychoanalytic approaches can help leaders identify underlying systemic issues and dysfunctional patterns within the organization. By uncovering and addressing these unconscious dynamics, leaders can work towards creating a healthier and more productive organizational culture. This can lead to improved team dynamics, increased employee satisfaction, and a more cohesive and resilient organizational structure.

Strategic Organizational Development

By understanding the unconscious motivations and dynamics that drive organizational behavior, leaders gain insights that can inform strategic initiatives such as change management, leadership succession planning, and organizational development. This understanding provides a solid foundation for driving meaningful and sustainable organizational change, fostering a more adaptive and progressive organizational culture.

Psychoanalytic principles can enhance leadership effectiveness and resilience. Leaders who have a deep understanding of their own unconscious motivations, as well as the unconscious dynamics at play within the organization, are better equipped to handle challenges and setbacks. They are more resilient in the face of adversity and can navigate complex situations with a greater sense of clarity and purpose. These leaders are also more self-aware, which enables them to recognize and manage their own biases and blind spots. By integrating psychoanalytic principles into organizational practices, leaders have the opportunity to enhance their decision-making abilities, address underlying systemic issues, drive strategic organizational development, and enhance their own leadership effectiveness and resilience.

Psychoanalytic approaches can also promote emotional intelligence and psychological safety within organizations. Leaders who are trained in psychoanalytic principles are more attuned to their own emotions and the emotions of others. They can create a supportive and inclusive environment where employees feel safe to express their thoughts, feelings, and concerns without fear of judgement or retribution. This fosters open communication, trust, and collaboration, leading to improved team dynamics and overall organizational performance.

Fostering Authentic Leadership Another area in which psychoanalytic principles can contribute to organizational practices is in fostering authentic leadership. Authentic leadership is characterized by leaders who are true to themselves and their values, and who inspire and empower others to do the same.

Authentic leadership is characterized by self-awareness, transparency, and genuine connection with others. By incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs and practices, organizations can cultivate leaders who are more authentic in their approach (Hoffman, 2010). These leaders are able to create a sense of meaning and purpose for their teams, leading to increased engagement and commitment.

Addressing Unconscious Bias and Power Dynamics

Psychoanalytic principles can also help organizations address unconscious bias and power dynamics that may be present within the organizational culture. By understanding the unconscious motivations and dynamics that influence individuals and groups, leaders can work towards creating a more inclusive and equitable environment. This includes examining patterns of privilege and oppression, promoting diversity and inclusion initiatives, and providing training and education on unconscious bias awareness. Overall, psychoanalytic offerings to leadership can be valuable in organizational practices as they promote emotional intelligence and psychological safety, foster authentic leadership, and address unconscious bias and power dynamics. Incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs and practices can contribute to the overall effectiveness and success of organizations. By acknowledging and addressing the deeper psychological processes at play within individuals and groups, organizations can create a more psychologically safe and inclusive environment. Overall, psychoanalytic offerings to leadership can provide valuable insights and strategies for improving organizational practices. Organizations can leverage psychoanalytic offerings in leadership to enhance emotional intelligence and psychological safety. The understanding of unconscious drives and patterns of behavior provided by psychoanalytic principles can contribute to the development of authentic leadership within organizations (Fotaki & Foroughi, 2021).

This can lead to better decision-making, stronger relationships with team members, and an overall healthier work culture. By integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs, organizations can encourage leaders to explore and understand their own unconscious bias and power dynamics. This self-reflection can help leaders become more aware of their own biases and how these biases may impact their decision-making and interactions with others. In addition, psychoanalytic principles can provide a framework for addressing power dynamics within organizations. In conclusion, integrating psychoanalytic approaches into leadership practices can enhance self-awareness, foster authentic leadership styles, improve decision-making and interpersonal

dynamics, and address systemic issues within the organization. This comprehensive approach to leadership can lead to a more psychologically healthy and supportive work environment and contribute to the long-term success and sustainability of the organization.

Benefits of incorporating psychoanalytic approaches to leadership in organizational practices include:

1. **Enhanced self-awareness:** Psychoanalytic approaches encourage leaders to explore their own unconscious motivations, desires, and fears. This increased self-awareness can lead to a deeper understanding of one's strengths, weaknesses, and blind spots as a leader.
2. **Improved emotional intelligence:** By exploring psychoanalytic perspectives, leaders can develop a greater understanding and awareness of their own emotions and the emotions of others. This increased emotional intelligence can enhance leaders' ability to effectively manage and regulate their own emotions, as well as empathize with and understand the emotions of their followers.
3. **Increased understanding of organizational dynamics:** Psychoanalytic perspectives can provide insights into the underlying psychological processes that shape organizational behavior and relationships. By understanding the unconscious dynamics at play within an organization, leaders can gain a deeper understanding of the underlying motivations and conflicts that drive team dynamics, decision-making processes, and overall organizational culture.
4. **Improved conflict resolution:** Psychoanalytic approaches can help leaders identify and address unconscious conflicts and dynamics that contribute to interpersonal conflicts within the organization. By understanding and addressing these unconscious dynamics, leaders can improve their ability to navigate and resolve conflicts in a more effective and sustainable manner.
5. **Enhanced decision-making:** By incorporating psychoanalytic approaches, leaders can gain a deeper understanding of their own unconscious biases and defense mechanisms that may influence their decision-making processes. This increased self-awareness can lead to more informed and rational decision-making, as leaders are able to recognize and mitigate the impact of their unconscious biases on the decision-making process.
6. **Improved relationship dynamics:** Psychoanalytic approaches emphasize the importance of understanding and addressing relational dynamics within leadership. By exploring unconscious patterns and dynamics in

relationships, leaders can improve their ability to build and maintain positive and effective relationships with their team members.

7. Increased self-reflection and personal growth: Psychoanalytic approaches encourage leaders to engage in self-reflection and introspection, leading to personal growth and increased self-awareness. This self-reflection can help leaders identify and address personal blind spots, unresolved conflicts, and emotional triggers that may impact their leadership effectiveness.

Overall, the psychoanalytic perspective offers valuable contributions to leadership by enhancing self-awareness, improving understanding of organizational dynamics, facilitating better conflict resolution, enhancing communication and decision-making, and promoting personal growth. These contributions can be integrated into organizational practices by incorporating psychoanalytic principles and techniques into leadership development programs, coaching sessions, and team-building exercises. By incorporating psychoanalytic principles and techniques into leadership development programs, coaching sessions, and team-building exercises, organizations can provide leaders with valuable tools for self-reflection and growth, ultimately improving their leadership effectiveness and the overall functioning of the organization (Anderson & Sun, 2015).

How Organizations Can Incorporate Psychoanalytic Theory in Leadership Practices

There are several ways that organizations can incorporate psychoanalytic theory into their leadership practices:

Provide Leadership Training: Organizations can offer leadership training programs that integrate psychoanalytic principles. These programs can provide leaders with an understanding of unconscious processes and their impact on leadership styles, as well as strategies for self-reflection, self-awareness, and self-regulation.

Include Psychoanalytic Perspectives in Leadership Assessments: Organizations can incorporate psychoanalytic concepts and assessments into their leadership assessment tools.

This can include utilizing tools such as the Rorschach Inkblot Test or the Thematic Apperception Test to gain insight into a leader's unconscious motivations and underlying psychological dynamics. Additionally, organizations can incorporate psychoanalytic perspectives into 360-degree feedback assessments, allowing leaders to receive feedback on both their conscious behaviors and the unconscious dynamics that may influence their leadership effectiveness.

1. **Create a Culture of Psychological Safety:** Organizations can foster a culture of psychological safety that encourages open dialogue and self-reflection. This can include creating spaces for leaders and employees to engage in meaningful conversations about their experiences, emotions, and unconscious dynamics that may impact their leadership effectiveness. By creating an environment where leaders feel safe to explore their own psychological processes, organizations can promote self-awareness, emotional intelligence, and adaptive leadership behaviors.
2. **Promote Leadership Coaching and Mentoring:** Organizations can provide opportunities for leaders to engage in ongoing coaching and mentoring relationships with experienced psychoanalytic professionals. These professionals can provide guidance and support in understanding and navigating unconscious processes, developing self-awareness, and promoting growth and development in leadership skills.
3. **Implement Leadership Development Programs:** Organizations can incorporate psychoanalytic concepts and frameworks into their leadership development programs. This can involve incorporating modules or workshops on topics such as understanding the unconscious mind, exploring defense mechanisms, and developing self-reflection and self-regulation skills to enhance the psychological understanding and self-awareness of leaders.

These initiatives can help leaders gain a deeper understanding of their own unconscious motivations, patterns, and behaviors, which in turn can lead to more effective leadership practices and enhanced organizational outcomes. Incorporating psychoanalytic perspectives into organizational practices can provide valuable insights into the unconscious motivations and underlying psychological dynamics of leaders. By integrating psychoanalytic perspectives, organizations can better understand the complexities of leadership and create strategies to address dysfunctional patterns and promote healthier organizational dynamics.

1. **Encourage Reflective Practices:** Organizations can encourage leaders to engage in reflective practices such as journaling, mindfulness, or therapy. These practices can help leaders gain insight into their own unconscious processes, explore their emotions, and thought patterns, and develop self-awareness.
2. **Facilitate Group Dynamics:** Organizations can create space for group discussions and team-building activities that promote open communication, trust, and psychological safety. This can create an atmosphere where leaders feel comfortable sharing their thoughts,

emotions, and vulnerabilities, leading to more authentic and effective leadership practices.

3. **Promote Psychological Safety:** Organizations can cultivate a culture of psychological safety, where leaders feel comfortable expressing their thoughts, ideas, and concerns without fear of judgment or repercussions. This allows leaders to explore their unconscious processes, address any underlying issues, and seek support and feedback from their peers and superiors.
4. **Foster Emotional Intelligence:** Organizations can provide training and development opportunities for leaders to enhance their emotional intelligence skills. This can include workshops and coaching sessions on emotional self-awareness, empathy, and effective communication. By fostering emotional intelligence, leaders can better understand and manage their own emotions and those of their team members, leading to more effective leadership practices and improved organizational outcomes.
5. **Implement Leadership Coaching:** Organizations can offer leadership coaching programs that incorporate psychoanalytic perspectives. These programs can provide leaders with a safe and confidential space to explore their unconscious motivations, fears, and desires. Through this coaching, leaders can gain deeper insight into their own behavior and make conscious efforts to address any patterns or issues that may be hindering their leadership effectiveness.
6. **Offer Therapeutic Support:** Organizations can consider offering therapy or counseling services for leaders who may benefit from deeper exploration of their unconscious processes and unresolved traumas. By providing access to therapeutic support, leaders can address any underlying issues that may be impacting their leadership effectiveness and well-being.
7. **Create Opportunities for Reflection and Self-Reflection:** Organizations can encourage leaders to engage in regular reflection and self-reflection practices. This can include setting aside time for journaling, meditation, or contemplative exercises that allow leaders to connect with their inner thoughts and emotions. These practices can help leaders gain self-awareness, process their experiences, and identify any unconscious biases or patterns that may be influencing their leadership style.
8. **Promote a Culture of Psychological Safety:** Organizations can create a culture that values open communication, trust, and support.

This can be achieved by fostering psychological safety, where all team members feel safe to express their thoughts, ideas, and concerns without fear of judgment or retribution. Leadership is a multifaceted concept that involves

complex processes and dynamics. Incorporating psychoanalytic perspectives into leadership practices can provide valuable insights into the unconscious motivations and underlying psychological dynamics of leaders. By integrating psychoanalytic perspectives, organizations can better understand the complexities of leadership and create strategies to address dysfunctional patterns and promote healthier organizational dynamics. One way to deepen the understanding of unconscious processes in leadership is to encourage reflective practices among leaders. Journaling, mindfulness, and therapy can help leaders gain insight into their own unconscious processes, explore their emotions, and thought patterns, and develop self-awareness. These practices can provide a safe space for leaders to delve into their own psychological processes, promoting emotional intelligence and adaptive leadership behaviors. Additionally, fostering psychological safety is crucial in creating an environment where leaders feel comfortable exploring their own psychological processes. Organizations can facilitate group discussions and team-building activities that promote open communication, trust, and psychological safety. By creating an atmosphere where leaders feel safe to share their thoughts, emotions, and vulnerabilities, organizations can promote a culture of authenticity and effective leadership practices.

Moreover, organizations can provide opportunities for leaders to engage in ongoing coaching and mentoring relationships with experienced psychoanalytic professionals. These professionals can offer guidance and support in understanding and navigating unconscious processes, developing self-awareness, and promoting growth and development in leadership skills. By incorporating psychoanalytic concepts and frameworks into leadership development programs, organizations can equip leaders with the tools to enhance their psychological understanding and self-awareness, leading to more effective leadership practices and enhanced organizational outcomes. In conclusion, psychoanalytic perspectives offer valuable insights into the unconscious motivations and dynamics of leaders.

Overcoming Challenges in Applying Psychoanalytic Theory to Leadership

While incorporating psychoanalytic theory into leadership practices can offer numerous benefits, there are also challenges that organizations may face in its implementation. One of the challenges is resistance or skepticism towards psychoanalytic concepts and methods in a business context. This resistance may stem from the perception that psychoanalysis is too theoretical or abstract and may be seen as lacking practicality in a business setting. To overcome this challenge, organizations can provide education and training on the practical applications of psychoanalytic theory in leadership. This can involve sharing case

studies and real-life examples that demonstrate the relevance and effectiveness of psychoanalytic concepts in leadership development and organizational practices. Additionally, organizations may encounter challenges in the confidentiality and privacy of psychoanalytic interventions. To address these concerns, organizations can establish clear protocols and guidelines to ensure the confidentiality and ethical practice of psychoanalytic interventions. They can also partner with reputable psychoanalytic professionals who uphold ethical standards and prioritize client confidentiality. Furthermore, organizations may face challenges in integrating psychoanalytic perspectives into existing leadership development programs and practices. To successfully integrate psychoanalytic perspectives, organizations can consider the following strategies:

1. Incorporating psychoanalytic concepts as a module or workshop within existing leadership development programs. This allows leaders to gain exposure to psychoanalytic concepts without overwhelming them with an entirely new framework.
2. Providing ongoing support and resources for leaders to delve deeper into psychoanalytic principles and apply them in their day-to-day leadership practices. This can include offering access to psychoanalytic literature, organizing discussion groups or seminars, and providing opportunities for leaders to engage in reflective practices that encourage self-awareness and introspection.
3. Creating a supportive and open organizational culture that values and encourages the exploration of psychoanalytic ideas. This can be achieved by fostering psychological safety, promoting dialogue and reflection, and recognizing the importance of personal growth and self-awareness in leadership development.
3. Collaborating with external psychoanalytic experts and consultants who can provide guidance and support in implementing psychoanalytic practices within the organization. These experts can assist in training leaders, providing ongoing supervision, and offering consultation on specific cases or organizational challenges.

By implementing these strategies, organizations can harness the potential of psychoanalytic concepts in leadership development and organizational practices while addressing concerns around confidentiality and integration. In today's rapidly changing world, the significance of accurate weather forecasts cannot be overstated. However, the use of psychoanalytic interventions in organizational practices raises important considerations regarding confidentiality and ethical practice. Organizations must prioritize client confidentiality and adhere to ethical standards when incorporating psychoanalytic perspectives. It is essential to create clear guidelines and boundaries regarding the use of psychoanalytic techniques

in organizational settings. These guidelines should address issues such as informed consent, privacy, and the proper handling of sensitive information. Additionally, organizations should provide training and education to leaders on the ethical considerations and boundaries of using psychoanalytic concepts in their leadership roles. Furthermore, organizations can benefit from integrating psychoanalytic principles into their leadership development programs.

This integration can involve incorporating psychoanalytic concepts and techniques into leadership training curricula, providing opportunities for leaders to explore their unconscious motivations and patterns of behavior, and facilitating reflective practices such as journaling and self-reflection exercises. By integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs, organizations can help leaders gain a deeper understanding of themselves and their behaviors, enhancing their self-awareness and their ability to effectively lead others. Additionally, psychoanalytic offerings can provide valuable insights into organizational dynamics and unconscious processes that impact leadership effectiveness. This understanding can contribute to creating a more psychologically healthy and supportive work environment, promoting open communication, trust, and collaboration among team members. Furthermore, the integration of psychoanalytic principles can also enhance leaders' ability to manage and navigate complex organizational challenges. By gaining insight into unconscious patterns and dynamics, leaders can better understand the underlying motivations and drivers of their own behaviors and those of their teams. This self-awareness allows leaders to address and mitigate dysfunctional dynamics, improve decision-making processes, and foster a more inclusive and empowering leadership style. In summary, incorporating psychoanalytic principles into organizational practices can provide valuable insights into individual and collective dynamics, enhance self-awareness, and promote effective leadership development and organizational change. By embracing and integrating psychoanalytic offerings in organizational practices, leaders and organizations can tap into a wealth of knowledge and understanding about unconscious drives, motivations, and behaviors that influence leadership effectiveness. Overall, the integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs and organizational practices can help leaders gain a deeper understanding of themselves, navigate complex challenges more effectively, and create a more psychologically healthy and supportive work environment.

By embracing and integrating psychoanalytic offerings in organizational practices, leaders and organizations can tap into a wealth of knowledge and understanding about unconscious drives, motivations, and behaviors that influence leadership effectiveness. This in turn can lead to improved decision-

making, enhanced communication and collaboration, and a more positive work environment. The integration of psychoanalytic principles into organizational practices can provide valuable insights into individual and collective dynamics, enhance self-awareness, and promote effective leadership development and organizational change. By incorporating psychoanalytic offerings into their leadership practices, leaders can gain a deeper understanding of their own motivations and behaviors, as well as those of their teams, allowing for more effective communication and collaboration. Furthermore, psychoanalytic principles can help leaders recognize and address underlying conflicts, anxieties, and unresolved issues that may be impacting their leadership effectiveness. Overall, by integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs and organizational practices, leaders can enhance their self-awareness, improve their decision-making processes, and create a more psychologically healthy and supportive work environment.

The Future of Psychoanalytic Leadership in Organizational Settings

The future of psychoanalytic leadership in organizational settings holds great potential. As more leaders and organizations recognize the value of incorporating psychoanalytic principles into their practices, there is likely to be an increase in research and development in this field. New measures and tools may be developed to assess psychoanalytic leadership effectiveness, allowing for more empirical study and validation of its impact on organizational outcomes. Furthermore, the integration of technology and digital platforms can facilitate the accessibility and delivery of psychoanalytic interventions in organizational settings. This can include online psychoanalytic coaching, virtual group therapy sessions, and digital platforms for self-reflection and exploration. These advancements can make psychoanalytic offerings more accessible and convenient for leaders, providing them with valuable resources to enhance their leadership skills and promote personal growth. In conclusion, the integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices has the potential to significantly enhance leadership effectiveness, promote self-awareness and personal growth, and foster a psychologically healthy work environment.

While the potential benefits of incorporating psychoanalytic principles into organizational practices are certainly intriguing, it is important to consider the potential drawbacks and concerns associated with this approach. One of the primary concerns is the potential intrusion on individual privacy and the handling of sensitive information. Psychoanalytic techniques often involve delving into deeply personal and often unconscious aspects of individuals' lives. In

organizational settings, the use of such techniques could raise concerns about the protection of employees' personal and psychological boundaries. Additionally, there is the potential for manipulation or misuse of psychoanalytic insights by organizational leaders. The knowledge gained from delving into individuals' unconscious motivations could be used to influence or control employees in ways that are not conducive to a healthy and supportive work environment. Furthermore, the introduction of psychoanalytic principles into leadership development programs could inadvertently contribute to a focus on individual introspection at the expense of more practical and actionable leadership skills. While self-awareness is undoubtedly important for effective leadership, an overemphasis on psychological self-reflection may detract from the development of concrete leadership competencies.

In summary, while there are potential benefits to integrating psychoanalytic principles into organizational practices, it is essential to carefully consider the ethical implications, potential for misuse, and balance with other leadership development approaches. Organizational leaders must proceed with caution and ensure that the use of psychoanalytic techniques is respectful of employee privacy and well-being. Overall, the integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices has the potential to offer valuable insights into individual and group dynamics, promote self-awareness and personal growth, and foster a psychologically healthy work environment. However, it is crucial to approach this integration with careful consideration and attention to potential drawbacks and concerns, such as privacy invasion, manipulation, and a potential overemphasis on introspection at the expense of practical leadership skills. Psychodynamic literature and frameworks have the potential to provide valuable insights into the processes associated with organizational change ([Risque & Moore, 2013](#)). Additionally, integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can help leaders understand the underlying motivations and dynamics that drive individual and group behavior. This understanding can inform decision-making, conflict resolution, and employee engagement strategies. Furthermore, the application of psychoanalytic theory can shed light on unconscious forces that impact organizational culture and dynamics. By recognizing and addressing these unconscious influences, leaders can create a more inclusive and supportive work environment. Overall, the integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices has the potential to offer valuable insights into individual and group dynamics, promote self-awareness and personal growth, and foster a psychologically healthy work environment.

However, it is important to recognize that psychoanalytic principles should not be seen as a standalone solution for leadership development. They should be integrated with other leadership theories, approaches, and practices to create a holistic and well-rounded approach to leadership development. The integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can offer valuable insights into individual and group dynamics, promote self-awareness and personal growth, and foster a psychologically healthy work environment. It can provide a deeper understanding of the unconscious motivations and behaviors that influence leadership effectiveness. By exploring the unconscious aspects of leadership, such as hidden fears, desires, and conflicts, leaders can gain insight into their own behaviors and their impact on others.

The integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices opens the door to a deeper understanding of the unconscious motivations and behaviors that influence leadership effectiveness. Psychodynamic literature provides a profound insight into the complexities of unconscious forces that shape individual and group dynamics within organizational settings. It delves into the hidden fears, desires, and conflicts that impact leaders' decision-making, communication styles, and overall influence on their teams. Moreover, the application of psychoanalytic theory sheds light on unconscious influences that permeate organizational culture and dynamics. Addressing these concealed influences can help leaders identify and rectify patterns that contribute to a toxic work environment, demotivated employees, or inefficient collaboration. By recognizing and addressing these unconscious influences, leaders can create a more nurturing, inclusive, and supportive work environment that fosters collaboration, creativity, and psychological well-being among employees. However, it's crucial to emphasize that psychoanalytic principles are most effective when integrated with other leadership theories, approaches, and practices. This holistic approach ensures that leaders develop a comprehensive understanding of their own behaviors and the behaviors of those they lead. By integrating psychoanalytic insights with more practical and actionable leadership skills, leaders can strike a balance that enables them to lead with empathy and self-awareness while also effectively managing and inspiring their teams. Understanding unconscious motivations and dynamics is particularly pertinent in decision-making and conflict resolution. Leaders who are equipped with insights into their own unconscious forces and those of their team members are better positioned to make decisions that consider underlying motivations and potential interpersonal dynamics. Similarly, in conflict resolution, a nuanced understanding of unconscious influences allows leaders to address root causes, facilitating more sustainable and lasting solutions to workplace conflicts. This

approach establishes a culture of empathy, understanding, and genuine problem-solving within the organization.

Conclusion

Integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices not only provides valuable insight into individual and group dynamics but also promotes self-awareness and personal growth, fostering psychologically healthy work environments. When utilized alongside other leadership approaches, psychoanalytic principles can offer a more profound and comprehensive understanding of the complexities of human behavior in the organizational context, ultimately contributing to more effective and empathetic leadership. Overall, psychoanalytic theory offers a unique perspective on leadership and organizational dynamics. The integration of psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices offers a valuable and profound understanding of the complexities of human behavior within an organizational context. By shedding light on unconscious motivations and behaviors, it enables leaders to make more informed decisions, navigate conflicts effectively, and create a nurturing work environment. When combined with other leadership approaches, it contributes to a holistic and comprehensive understanding of leadership dynamics. The exploration of unconscious forces within organizational settings reveals the hidden fears, desires, and conflicts that impact leadership effectiveness. This deeper comprehension of individual and group dynamics informs leaders about their own behaviors and their influence on others. It also enables them to recognize and rectify patterns contributing to a toxic work environment, fostering collaboration, creativity, and psychological well-being among employees.

It is paramount to emphasize that while psychoanalytic insights provide valuable perspectives, they should be combined with practical and actionable leadership skills. This integration ensures that leaders can lead with empathy and self-awareness while effectively managing and inspiring their teams. In decision-making and conflict resolution, a nuanced understanding of unconscious influences allows leaders to address root causes, establish a culture of empathy, understanding, and genuine problem-solving within the organization. Ultimately, integrating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices offers a unique perspective on human behavior and organizational dynamics. When used judiciously, it not only promotes self-awareness and personal growth but also fosters psychologically healthy work environments, contributing to more effective and empathetic leadership across organizations. Psychoanalytic principles can enhance leadership and organizational practices by offering a

deeper understanding of unconscious motivations, behaviors, and conflicts (Fotaki & Foroughi, 2021). This understanding can lead to more informed decision-making, effective conflict resolution, and the creation of nurturing work environments. By examining the impact of unconscious drives and early-life attachments on leadership behaviors, psychoanalytic theory offers insights into the deep, unconscious links between leaders and followers and the influence of these dynamics on organizational reality. Furthermore, integrating psychoanalytic principles allows leaders to address underlying psychological patterns and barriers that may hinder individual and organizational growth. By uncovering and examining the unconscious dynamics at play within leadership identities, organizations can better understand why certain patterns of behavior may arise and persist. By acknowledging and addressing these unconscious dynamics, leaders can create a more inclusive and productive work environment, where individuals feel heard, valued, and empowered to contribute their best. Incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices requires a comprehensive approach that considers both conscious and unconscious dynamics. Leaders can benefit from developing self-awareness and an understanding of their own unconscious drives, as well as fostering an environment where employees feel safe to explore their own unconscious motivations and behaviors. This can be achieved through practices such as individual and group therapy, reflective exercises, and creating spaces for open dialogue and psychological exploration. Overall, incorporating psychoanalytic principles into leadership and organizational practices can contribute to a deeper understanding of human behavior and promote more effective leadership. In addition to the integration of psychoanalytic principles, it is vital to acknowledge the significance of practical and actionable leadership skills. By combining these skills with insights into the unconscious, leaders can effectively manage and inspire their teams while leading with empathy and self-awareness.

When it comes to decision-making and conflict resolution, a thorough understanding of unconscious influences allows leaders to address root causes and establish a culture of empathy and genuine problem-solving within the organization. This approach paves the way for sustainable and lasting solutions to workplace conflicts and fosters an environment of understanding, collaboration, and effective decision-making. By integrating psychoanalytic principles with other leadership approaches, leaders can gain a holistic understanding of their own behaviors and their impact on others. Furthermore, this integration enables them to recognize and rectify patterns contributing to a dysfunctional work environment, thereby cultivating collaboration, creativity, and psychological well-being among employees. In conclusion, the integration of

psychoanalytic principles, when combined with practical leadership skills, offers a comprehensive understanding of human behavior in organizational settings. This not only promotes self-awareness and personal growth but also contributes to psychologically healthy work environments, ultimately leading to more effective and empathetic leadership across organizations.

References

- Tumaini, A. M. (2022). *Practical Implications of Credible and Authentic Leadership in Organizations*. Science Publishing Group
- Sarjana, S. (2017). Resource based view as a strengthening of industry' s capabilities to improve competitive strategies. *International Journal of Advanced Research* 5(7):2195-2204.
- Longenecker, C O., & Yonker, R D. (2013). Leadership deficiencies in rapidly changing organizations: multisource feedback as a needs assessment tool – Part I, *Industrial and Commercial Training*, 45(3), 159-165. <https://doi.org/10.1108/00197851311320577>
- Kahn, S M. (2016). Eros and Thanatos: A psychoanalytic examination of death in the context of working life. *Management Forum*, 4(3), 29-40.
- Fotaki, M., & Foroughi, H. (2022). Extinction Rebellion: Green activism and the fantasy of leaderlessness in a decentralized movement. *Leadership*, 18(2), 224-246. <https://doi.org/10.1177/17427150211005578>
- Hoffman, J. (2010). An Organization's search for meaning: A humanistic and existential theory for organizational identity and voice, *Journal of Psychological Issues in Organizational Culture* 1(2): 40–63 .
- Anderson, M. H., & Sun, P. Y. T. (2017). Reviewing leadership styles: Overlaps and the need for a new 'full-range' theory. *International Journal of Management Reviews*, 19(1), 76–96. <https://doi.org/10.1111/ijmr.12082>
- Risquez, A. and Moore, S. (2013). Exploring feelings about technology integration in higher education: Individuation and congruence, *Journal of Organizational Change Management*, 26(2), 326-339. <https://doi.org/10.1108/09534811311328371>

CHAPTER 8

THE ROLE OF MONETARY SUPPLY IN SHAPING INDUSTRIAL PRODUCTION: A DETAILED ARDL ANALYSIS IN THE INDIAN CONTEXT

ÖZGÜR ÖZAYDIN¹

CAN APAYDIN²

Keywords: Industrial Production, Broad Money, Monetary Policy, Autoregressive Distributed Lag (ARDL) Model Cointegration Analysis, Structural Breaks.

INTRODUCTION

Broad money, a comprehensive measure of an economy's money supply, has the potential to play an important role in determining output, and particularly industrial production, in an economy. Determining the dynamics of the complex and multifaceted relationship between broad money and output is extremely important, as it will contribute to a better understanding of economic fluctuations resulting from monetary policy and reveal how these fluctuations created by changes in the money supply can affect the structure and growth of the industrial sector. Therefore, examining the dynamics between broad money and industrial production has long been a subject of intense debate and research among researchers.

In this context, from a Keynesian perspective, it is argued that increases in money supply will have a positive effect on industrial production. This argument is fundamentally based on the assumption that, given the general level of prices, an increase in the nominal money supply will lead to an increase in real money supply, thereby enhancing real liquidity in the economy. The increased liquidity is expected to lower interest rates, making borrowing more attractive for businesses and encouraging firms to invest in new projects and expand their existing operations, thereby increasing production levels. Another key foundation of this argument, when considered in the context of households, is that the

¹Asst.Prof.Dr., Ondokuz Mayıs University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Economics; e-mail:ozaydin@omu.edu.tr , ORCID ID: 0000-0003-0579-9432

² Research Assistant, Ondokuz Mayıs University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Economics; e-mail:can.apaydin@omu.edu.tr ; ORCID ID: 0000-0003-0341-2548

increase in liquidity resulting from the increased money supply will enhance consumers' purchasing power. As consumers' purchasing power increases, they will demand more industrial goods, and this surge in demand will create a feedback effect, encouraging firms to produce more to capture a larger share of the growing market.

Contrary to the Keynesian view, Monetarist theory suggests that excessive increases in the money supply may negatively affect industrial production. This argument is based on the assumption that uncontrolled expansion of the money supply will lead to high inflation. According to this approach, in an economic environment with high inflation, raw material and production costs will increase, which will cause companies to face higher input costs. Increasing input costs will force companies to reduce production in order to maintain profit margins, which will cause industrial production to decrease. In addition, from a monetarist perspective, constant inflation resulting from the increases in the money supply will create an environment of uncertainty in the economy and cause companies to face unforeseen costs, which will cause companies to be reluctant to make new investments, which will especially discourage long-term investments.

The Rational Expectations Theory, differing from Keynesian and Monetarist views, posits a neutral link between money supply and industrial output under certain circumstances. This theory maintains that both firms and households predict the outcomes of alterations in monetary policy and adjust their behaviors to align with these expectations. For instance, when there is an increase in money supply, economic entities forecasting this as a precursor to inflation will adapt their actions based on this foresight. In this scenario, if businesses foresee a simultaneous rise in both input costs and product prices, neutralizing any changes in profitability, they are likely not to alter their production quantities. From a household perspective, consumers expecting future price rises due to an augmented money supply might decide to increase savings instead of spending, thus neutralizing the anticipated stimulatory effect of the increased money supply on consumer demand. As a result, Rational Expectations Theory argues that as long as shifts in monetary policy are foreseen and integrated into economic decision-making, they will not substantially affect real economic indicators such as industrial production.

This paper aims to empirically examine which of the dynamics expressed within the framework of the above-mentioned theoretical approaches are in action by considering the effect of money supply on industrial production in the case of India. In this context, the analysis was carried out in an econometric methodology where unit root tests were employed, and Error Correction Model (ECM) and Long-Term Model were estimated within the framework of Autoregressive

Distributed Lag (ARDL) model . Under these conditions, the study aims to shed more light on which economic policies should be followed in the context of the money supply industrial production relationship in developing economies such as India, by investigating how money supply can affect industrial production considering both short-term and long-term dynamics, through the employed econometric methodology.

LITERATURE REVIEW

When searching for studies explaining the empirical relationship between industrial output and money supply in literature, it is observed that most studies find a positive relationship. Matola (2023) reported a positive relationship in Malawi from 2004 to 2016. Ogbonna et al. (2022) found a significant long-run relationship in Kenya, Nigeria, and South Africa spanning from 1986 to 2021. Akpunonu & Orajaka (2021) observed a positive relationship in Nigeria from 1986 to 2019. Ngong et al. (2021) noted a positive relationship in Cameroon from 1970 to 2018. Yua et al. (2021) and Hammed (2020) both confirmed a positive relationship in Nigeria from 1981 to 2018. Pandey & Shettigar (2017) identified a positive relationship in India from 1991 to 2015. Kutu & Ngalawa (2016) reported a positive relationship in South Africa from 1994 to 2012. However, Udoh & Ogbuagu (2012) found a contrasting negative relationship in Nigeria from 1970 to 2009. Details of the studies described are listed in Table 1 below.

Table 1. Literature Review

Research	Period	Frequency	Sample	Method(s)	Findings
Matola (2023)	2004M04-2016M05	Monthly	Malawi	ARDL, LSBP	Positive Relationship
Ogbonna et al. (2022)	1986-2021	Annual	Kenya, Nigeria, South Africa	Panel ARDL	Significant Long-Run Relationship
Akpunonu & Orajaka (2021)	1986-2019	Annual	Nigeria	OLS	Positive Relationship
Ngong et al. (2021)	1970-2018	Annual	Cameroon	ARDL	Positive Relationship
Yua et al. (2021)	1981-2018	Annual	Nigeria	ARDL	Positive Relationship
Hammed (2020)	1981-2018	Annual	Nigeria	VAR	Positive Relationship
Pandey & Shettigar (2017)	1991-2015	Monthly	India	VECM, ARDL, VAR	Positive Relationship
Kutu & Ngalawa (2016)	1994M01-2012M12	Monthly	South Africa	SVAR	Positive Relationship
Udoh & Ogbuagu (2012)	1970-2009	Annual	Nigeria	ARDL	Negative Relationship

MODEL, DATA, METHODOLOGY and FINDINGS

Model

The mathematical model used in the study to explore the functional relationship between Industrial Production (IP_t) and Broad Money (M_t) is presented with Equation (1).

$$IP_t = f(M_t) \quad (1)$$

The logarithmic form of the model is presented in Equation (2)

$$ip_t = \alpha_{0a} + \alpha_{1a}m_t + \epsilon_{0t} \quad (2)$$

where ip_t is industrial production, and m_t is broad money in their logarithmic form. α 's are the Ordinary Least Squares estimators and ϵ_{0t} represents the white noise disturbance term.

Data

The Indian data utilized in this study comprises annual measurements, extending from the year 1960 to 2021. Per capita Industry value added, is quantified in constant US dollars with the base year being 2015, serving as a proxy for industrial production. Per capita broad money, which also measured in constant US dollars (base year 2015), represents the broader monetary supply within the economy. The data source for these variables is the World Development Indicators database.

Methodology and Findings

In this study, preliminary, the stationarity characteristics of the series under consideration is examined by utilizing various unit root tests. Following this, the best fitting econometric method is selected based on the results of the unit root tests.

Stationarity Tests

To ascertain the presence or absence of unit root in the examined time series, per capita broad money and per capita industrial production, the Augmented Dickey-Fuller (ADF), Phillips-Perron (PP), and Lee-Strazicich unit root tests are utilized. The results of the ADF test meticulously presented, in Table 2 and 3. Additionally, a detailed overview of the results obtained from the PP unit root test are provided in Table 4 and Table 5. Moreover, the findings of the LS unit root test are presented in a structured manner in Table 6 and Table 7.

Table 2. ADF³ Test Outcomes

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
<i>ip</i>	2.72 (4)	-1.28 (4)
Δip	-5.34*** (0)	-5.31*** (3)
<i>m</i>	0.77 (1)	-2.99 (1)
Δm	-4.75*** (0)	-4.87*** (0)

*** indicates stationarity at 1% significance level.

³ Maximum lag length for ADF unit root test (Dickey & Fuller, 1979) is determined as 8 lags and optimal lag length is chosen by using Akaike Information Criterion (Akaike, 1973, 1998), the values in parentheses are the chosen lag lengths.

The Augmented Dickey-Fuller (ADF) unit root test findings, as encapsulated in Tables 2 and 3, provide a nuanced understanding of the stationarity properties of the series in question. For the variable representing industrial production (*ip*), the ADF test statistic is 2.72 with 4 lags for the model with an intercept, and -1.28 with 4 lags for the model with both intercept and trend. However, its first difference (Δip) exhibits stationarity, as indicated by the significant test statistics of -5.34 (0 lags) for the model with intercept and -5.31 (3 lags) for the model with both intercept and trend, both significant at the 1% level.

Similarly, for the variable broad money (*m*), the ADF test statistic is 0.77 with 1 lag for the model with intercept and -2.99 with 1 lag for the model with both intercept and trend. The first difference of *m* (Δm) also demonstrates stationarity, with test statistics of -4.75 (0 lags) and -4.87 (0 lags) for the models with intercept and both intercept and trend respectively, significant at the 1% level.

Table 3. Stationarity Level (ADF Test)

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
<i>ip</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) ***
<i>m</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) ***

***, indicates stationarity at 1% significance level.

The results, as underscored in Table 3, represents these findings, indicating both variables as I(1) at the 1% significance level, both for models with intercept and with intercept and trend.

Table 4. PP⁴ Test Outcomes

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
<i>ip</i>	1.55 (2)	-1.13 (2)
Δip	-5.29*** (2)	-5.31*** (6)
<i>m</i>	1.50 (3)	-3.44 (0)
Δm	-4.78*** (2)	-4.92*** (2)

*** indicates stationarity at 1% significance level.

The Phillips Perron (PP) unit root test outcomes, as shown in Table 4, and their corresponding stationarity interpretations, detailed in Table 5, offer a comprehensive analysis of the time series data. For industrial production (*ip*), the

⁴ Bartlett kernel (Bartlett, 1948, 1950) is used as the spectral estimation method and Newey-West (Newey and West, 1986) bandwidth is used as the bandwidth for P-P (Phillips and Perron, 1988) unit root test, the values in parentheses are the chosen lag lengths.

PP test yields a statistic of 1.55 with 2 lags for the model with an intercept, and -1.13 with 2 lags for the model with both intercept and trend. These values suggest non-stationarity at the level. However, the differenced series (Δip) shows a marked contrast, with test statistics of -5.29 (2 lags) and -5.31 (6 lags) for the models with intercept and both intercept and trend respectively, confirming stationarity at the 1% significance level.

In the case of the broad money variable (m), the PP test indicates a statistic of 1.50 with 3 lags for the model with intercept, and -3.44 with no lags for the model with intercept and trend, pointing towards non-stationarity at the level. The differenced series (Δm) reveals stationarity, as indicated by test statistics of -4.78 (2 lags) and -4.92 (2 lags) for the models with intercept and both intercept and trend respectively, significant at the 1% level.

Table 5. Stationarity Level (PP Test)

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
ip	I (1) ***	I (1) ***
m	I (1) ***	I (1) ***

*** indicates stationarity at 1% significance level.

Table 5 consolidates these findings, categorizing both ip and m as I(1) series, for both models with intercept and with intercept and trend.

Table 6. LS⁵ Test Outcomes

Variable	Crash		Break	
	test statistic	break year	test statistic	break year
ip	-1.79 (5)	1994	-3.56 (7)	2002
Δip	-5.50*** (0)	1970	-6.08*** (3)	2014
m	-1.69 (6)	1976	-4.25 (7)	1973
Δm	-5.42*** (3)	2008	-5.81*** (3)	2010

*** indicates stationarity at 1% significance level.

The Lee Strazicich (LS) unit root test results, as delineated in Table 6, combined with the stationarity assessments in Table 7, provide more sophisticated analysis of the time series data. The LS test for the industrial production variable (ip) registers a test statistic of -1.79 with 5 lags and a break year of 1994 for the Crash model, and -3.56 with 7 lags and a break year of 2002

⁵ Maximum lag length for LS unit root test (Lee & Strazicich, 2003) is determined as 8 lags.

for the Break model, indicating non-stationarity at the level. Conversely, the differenced series (Δip) exhibits clear stationarity, evidenced by test statistics of -5.50 (0 lags, break year 1970) and -6.08 (3 lags, break year 2014) for Crash and Break models, respectively, significant at the 1% level.

For the broad money variable (m), the LS test produces a statistic of -1.69 with 6 lags and a break year of 1976 for the Crash model, and -4.25 with 7 lags and a break year of 1973 for the Break model, indicating non-stationarity at the level. The first differenced series (Δm) demonstrates stationarity, as shown by test statistics of -5.42 (3 lags, break year 2008) and -5.81 (3 lags, break year 2010) for the respective models, again significant at the 1% level.

Table 7. Stationarity Level (LS Test)

Variable	Crash	Break
<i>ip</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) ***
<i>m</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) ***

*** indicates stationarity at 1% significance level.

Table 7 corroborates these findings, categorizing both variables as I(1), for both Crash and Break models, at the 1% significance level.

In the realm of the study's unit root analysis, the industrial production (*ip*) and broad money (*m*) variables consistently demonstrated a lack of stationarity in their level forms (not I(0)) across all three tests - Augmented Dickey-Fuller (ADF), Phillips Perron (PP), and Lee Strazicich (LS). Moreover, the results obtained from all unit root tests revealed that both industrial production (*ip*) and broad money supply (*m*) variables became stationary in their first differences.

ARDL⁶ Model

In this study, the Autoregressive Distributed Lag approach is used to investigate the potential relationships between broad money and industrial production. The main reasons for choosing the ARDL method are that the method allows the short- and long-term relationships between the variables to be examined simultaneously and that it has the capacity to produce unbiased and consistent estimators in cases where the number of data is limited, as in this study.

The UECM format of the ARDL model used in the study is expressed in Equation 3.

⁶ Pesaran and Pesaran (1997), Pesaran and Smith (1998), Pesaran and Shin (1995,1998,1999) and Pesaran et al. (2001) .

$$\Delta ip = \alpha_{0b} + \sum_{i=1}^{c_1} \alpha_{1b} \Delta ip_{t-i} + \sum_{i=0}^{c_2} \alpha_{2b} \Delta m_{t-i} + \alpha_{3b} d_{1970} + \beta_{1b} ip_{t-1} + \beta_{2b} m + \epsilon_{1t} \quad (3)$$

In Equation (3), *ip* serves as a proxy for the industrial sector's economic output, while *m* represents the broader monetary resources within the economy. The *c*'s in the equation signify the chosen lag lengths. The *d*₁₉₇₀, dummy variable, accounts for the structural break identified in the year 1970, as suggested by the Crash model of Lee Strazicich unit root test. The coefficients *α*'s and *β*'s, are the OLS estimators. Lastly, *ε*_{1t} represents the random fluctuations in the model.

Robustness of the Selected Model

The ARDL model chosen for this study which is ARDL (2,0), was selected based on the Akaike Information Criterion (AIC). Prior to further analysis, the model's robustness was checked through a series of diagnostic tests, including the Jarque-Bera test for normality, the Breusch-Godfrey test for serial correlation, the ARCH test for heteroscedasticity, and the Ramsey RESET test for model specification. The outcomes of these diagnostic assessments are systematically presented in Table 8.

Table 8. Diagnostic Test Findings

Test	Test Statistic	Prob.	Test	Test Statistic	Prob.
χ^2_N (Jarque-Bera ⁷)	2.61	0.27	χ^2_{HS} (ARCH ⁸)	0.11	0.73
χ^2_{SC} (Breusch-Godfrey ⁹)	3.33	0.07	χ^2_{MM} (Ramsey RESET ¹⁰)	0.41	0.52

According to the findings presented in Table 8, the Jarque-Bera test, with a statistic of 2.61 and a probability level of 0.27, confirmed the normality of residuals. The Breusch-Godfrey test yielded a statistic of 3.33 with a probability of 0.07, suggesting that no serial correlation in the residuals. ARCH test results, with a test statistic of 0.11 and a probability value of 0.73, showed that there is no heteroscedasticity problem in the model. In addition, the Ramsey RESET test statistic (0.41), which has a calculated probability value of 0.52, also implied that there is no model specification error in the model.

⁷ (Jarque & Bera, 1980)

⁸ (Engle, 1982)

⁹ (Breusch & Godfrey, 1981)

¹⁰ (Ramsey, 1969).

When considered as a whole, all the diagnostic tests collectively confirmed the robustness and reliability of the selected ARDL (2,0) model and clearly demonstrated that the model is free from non-normality, serial correlation, heteroscedasticity, and model misspecification problems.

In addition to diagnostic tests, the ARDL (2,0) model is examined using CUSUM and CUSUMSQ tests to check whether the parameters of the model are stable over time, and the findings of the relevant tests are presented visually in Figure 1.

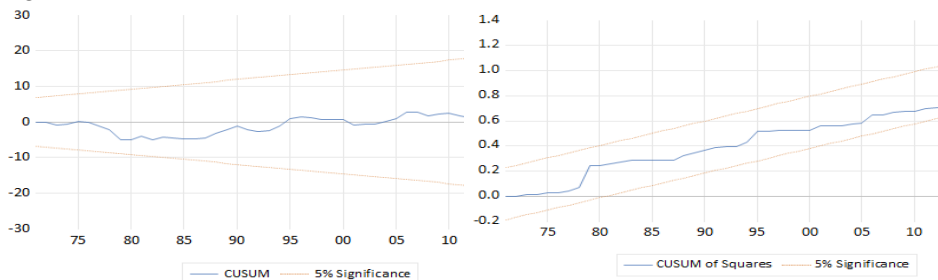


Figure 1. CUSUM¹¹ and CUSUMSQ¹² Test Findings

The CUSUM line, which can be seen in the left part of the Figure 1, stayed within the critical bounds at the 5% significance level, indicating that the parameters of the model are stable over the sample period. Similarly, the CUSUMSQ line on the right side of Figure 1 also remained between the lower and upper bound values at the 5% significance level, thus confirming that the model parameters are stationary.

In sum, both CUSUM and CUSUMSQ test findings revealed that the selected ARDL(2,0) model is robust in terms of parameter stability.

Bounds Test

After verifying the robustness and the reliability of the model, the bounds test methodology is used to examine if there is a cointegration relationship between broad money and industrial production in India.

The ARDL bounds testing approach involves comparing the calculated test statistics with critical lower and upper bound values. If the absolute value of the regarding test statistic is greater than the upper threshold value, it indicates the presence of cointegration between the variables. In contrast, if the calculated statistic is less than the lower threshold value, it indicates the absence of

¹¹ (Page, 1954)
¹² (Brown et.al, 1975)

cointegration. However, if the test statistic lies within the range defined by the upper and lower bounds, the outcome of the test is uncertain.

The results of the bounds test for the ARDL(2,0) model are displayed in Table 9.

Table 9. Bounds Test Findings

Test	Calculated Test Statistic	Lower-bound Value (1%)	Upper-bound Value (1%)
<i>F</i>	10.09***	7.43	8.46
Test	Calculated Test Statistic	Lower-bound Value (1%)	Upper-bound Value (1%)
<i>t</i>	-3.87***	-3.43	-3.82

*** indicates statistical significance at 1% level.

According to the bounds test findings, as illustrated in Table 9, the computed F-statistic of 10.09, surpassed the upper bound value of 8.46 at the 1% significance level. Additionally, the t-statistic of -3.87, also exceed the upper bound critical value of -3.43, in terms of absolute value at the 1% significance level. Therefore, the findings of both F and t tests collectively pointed towards a statistically significant cointegration relationship between broad money and industrial production, by rejecting the null hypothesis of no cointegration.

Error Correction Model

Upon demonstrating the robustness of the ARDL (2,0) model with diagnostic and parameter stability tests and confirming that there is a cointegration relationship between the variables, in this part of the study, the Error Correction Model was estimated, which, on the one hand, expresses the short-term dynamics between variables and, on the other hand, reveals how deviations from long-term equilibrium are adjusted in the short term. The results obtained from the ECM model estimation summarizing the dynamics in question are presented in detail in Table 10.

Table 10. Estimations of the ECM Model

Variable	Coefficient	St. Error	t-statistics	p-value
γ_{t-1}	-0.18	0.04	-4.53	0.00***
Δip_{t-1}	0.16	0.11	1.42	0.16
d_{1970}	-0.03	0.01	-2.86	0.00***
C	0.295	0.061	4.86	0.00***
Important Statistics				
$\overline{R^2}$	0.29		F	9.22***
RSS	0.04		DW	1.74

*** indicates statistical significance at 1% level.

According to the findings of the Error Correction Model (ECM) that are shown in Table 10, the one period lagged error correction term was found to have a coefficient of -0.18 and a t-statistic of -4.53. The error correction term has a negative sign, as expected, and is statistically significant at the 1% significance level. The coefficient of the one period lagged error correction term (-0.18) shows that approximately 18% of a disequilibrium that occurs in the short term is corrected within a period.

Long Run Model

In this part of the study, the relation between per capita broad money and per capita industrial production is analyzed by the estimation of the log run form, which reflects the equilibrium relationship in the absence of short run fluctuations, of the ARDL (2,0) model. The findings from this estimation, which reveal long run transactions between money supply and industrial production, are comprehensively presented in Table 11.

Table 11. Long Run Model Estimations

Variable	Coefficient	St. Error	t-statistics	p-value
m_t	0.68	0.02	27.17	0.00***

*** indicates statistical significance at 1% level.

The findings from the Long Run Model, shown in Table 11, shed light on the long-term relationship between the variables studied. The data reveals that for every 1% increase in per capita broad money (m_t), there is a corresponding 0.68% rise in per capita industry value added (ip). This finding, with a coefficient of 0.68 and a highly significant t-statistic of 27.17, is reliable at the 1% level,

indicating a strong and positive long-term link between money supply and industrial production.

CONCLUSION and POLICY IMPLICATIONS

In this study, a detailed econometric approach was used to examine how broad money affects industrial production in India. Initially, unit root tests showed that both broad money and industrial production were initially non-stationary but stabilized after first differencing, indicating an I(1) process. The Autoregressive Distributed Lag (ARDL) model, specifically ARDL (2,0), chosen based on the Akaike Information Criterion, passed various diagnostic tests like Jarque-Bera, Breusch-Godfrey, ARCH, and Ramsey RESET, confirming its reliability. The stability of the model parameters was also confirmed by the CUSUM and CUSUMSQ tests. The Error Correction Model (ECM) indicated a significant correction mechanism, showing moderate adjustments towards long-term equilibrium. The long-run model results highlighted a positive and statistically significant link between broad money and industrial production, suggesting that changes in money supply significantly affect industrial output over the long term.

The results obtained within the framework of this research have important political implications, especially for developing countries such as India. The long run positive relationship between broad money supply and industrial production, which is detected within the scope of the study findings, reveals the importance of monetary policy, which is carefully designed in a way that does not cause an inflationary environment, in promoting industrial growth. Therefore, policymakers in India should consider the potential impacts of increasing the money supply on the industrial sector and use broad money as a tool to achieve stable economic growth. In conclusion, the research findings supported the arguments of Keynesian Theory, which can be expressed as a controlled increase in broad money can be beneficial for industrial production and thus contribute to general economic development.

On the other hand, it should not be overlooked that this study, which aims to analyze the relationship between money supply and industrial production, has some limitations. First of all, since the scope of the study is limited to India only, the results may not be directly applicable to other economies with different monetary and industrial structures. In addition, a certain time period was examined within the framework of data availability in the study, and it is quite possible to obtain different results for different time periods. In addition, the econometric methodology used in the study is limited only to the linear ARDL framework, and it is possible to reach different findings by using other econometric techniques. Additionally, the study focused only on the effect of

money supply on industrial production. In this context, future studies on money supply and industrial production could examine the relationship between money supply and industrial output, in the context of different countries and regions, investigate different time periods, examine it using different econometric techniques, and include additional variables in the analysis that have the potential to affect industrial output, such as interest rates, inflation rate, exchange rate, trade openness, financial depth etc. Such studies will make significant contributions to a better understanding of the dynamic and complex relationship between monetary policy and industrial production.

REFERENCES

- Akaike, H. (1973). Information Theory and an Extension of the Maximum Likelihood Principle. In Proceedings of the 2nd International Symposium on Information, B.N. Petrow & F. Czaki (Eds.), Akademiai Kiado, Budapest.
- Akaike, H. (1998). Information Theory and an Extension of the Maximum Likelihood Principle. In Selected Papers of Hirotugu Akaike (pp. 199-213). Springer, New York, NY. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-1694-0_15
- Akpunonu, U., & Orajaka, U. P. (2021). Effect of Monetary Policy on Industrial Growth in Nigeria. *International Journal of Entrepreneurship and Business Innovation*, 4(1), 47-60. <https://doi.org/10.52589/ijebi-1z4iybye>
- Bartlett, M. S. (1948). Smoothing Periodograms from Time-Series with Continuous Spectra. *Nature*, 161(4096), 686-687. <https://doi.org/10.1038/161686a0>
- Bartlett, M. S. (1950). Periodogram Analysis and Continuous Spectra. *Biometrika*, 37(1/2), 1-16. <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/37.1-2.1>
- Breusch, T. S., & Godfrey, L. G. (1981). A Review of Recent Work on Testing for Autocorrelation in Dynamic Simultaneous Models. In D. Currie, R. Nobay, & D. Peel (Eds.), *Macroeconomic Analysis: Essays in Macroeconomics and Econometrics* (pp. 63-105). Croom Helm.
- Brown, R. L., Durbin, J., & Evans, J. M. (1975). Techniques for Testing the Constancy of Regression Relationships Over Time. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society Series B (Methodological)*, 37(2), 149-163. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.2517-6161.1975.tb01532.x>
- Durbin, J., & Watson, G. S. (1950). Testing for Serial Correlation in Least Squares Regression: I. *Biometrika*, 37(3/4), 409-428. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2332391>
- Engle, R. F. (1982). Autoregressive Conditional Heteroscedasticity with Estimates of the Variance of United Kingdom Inflation. *Econometrica*, 50(4), 987-1007. <https://doi.org/10.2307/1912773>
- Hammed, Y. S. (2020). Monetary Policy Shocks and Manufacturing Output in Nigeria (1981-2018). *Advanced Journal of Social Science*, 7(1), 27-37. <https://doi.org/10.21467/ajss.7.1.27-37>
- Jarque, C. M., & Bera, A. K. (1980). Efficient Tests for Normality, Homoscedasticity and Serial Independence of Regression Residuals. *Economics Letters*, 6(3), 255-259. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0165-1765\(80\)90024-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/0165-1765(80)90024-5)

- Kutu, A. A., & Ngalawa, H. (2016). Monetary Policy Shocks and Industrial Sector Performance in South Africa. *Journal of Economics and Behavioral Studies*, 8(3(J)), 26-40. [https://doi.org/10.22610/jebbs.v8i3\(j\).1286](https://doi.org/10.22610/jebbs.v8i3(j).1286)
- Lee, J., & Strazicich, M. C. (2003). Minimum Lagrange Multiplier Unit Root Test with Two Structural Breaks. *Review of Economics and Statistics*, 85(4), 1082-1089. <https://doi.org/10.1162/003465303772815961>
- Matola, J. U. (2023). How Monetary Policy Affects Industrial Activity in Malawi: Evidence from ARDL and VAR Models. *Cogent Economics & Finance*, 11(1). <https://doi.org/10.1080/23322039.2023.2190643>
- Newey, W. K., & West, K. D. (1986). A Simple, Positive Semi-Definite, Heteroskedasticity and Autocorrelation Consistent Covariance Matrix. *Econometrica*, 55(3), 703-708. <https://doi.org/10.2307/1913610>
- Ngong, C. A., Manasseh, C. O., Okonkwo, O. N., & Nwakoby, I. C. (2021). Financial Deepening and Manufacturing Sector Productivity in Cameroon (1970–2018). *Psychology and Education Journal*, 58(2), 9813-9828.
- Ogbonna, K. S., Anaemena, H. C., Anyanwu, F. A., Okechukwu, P. A., Anyamaobi, C., & Okafor, T. G. (2022). Monetary Policy: The Case of Industrial Output of Selected Developing African Economies. *Asian Research Journal of Current Science*, 287-301.
- Page, E. S. (1954) Continuous Inspection Schemes. *Biometrika*, 41(1/2), 100-115. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2333009>
- Pandey, A., & Shettigar, J. (2017). Relationship Between Monetary Policy and Industrial Production in India. *Current Issues in Economics and Finance*, 37-52. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-981-10-5810-3_3
- Pesaran, M. H., & Pesaran, B. (1997). *Working with Microfit 4.0: An Interactive Econometric Software Package (DOS and Windows Versions)*. Oxford, Oxford University Press.
- Pesaran, M. H., & Shin, Y. (1995). *An Autoregressive Distributed Lag Modeling Approach to Cointegration Analysis*. Vol. 9514. Cambridge, UK, Department of Applied Economics, University of Cambridge.
- Pesaran, M. H., & Shin, Y. (1998). Generalized Impulse Response Analysis in Linear Multivariate Models. *Economics Letters*, 58(1), 17-29. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0165-1765\(97\)00214-0](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0165-1765(97)00214-0)
- Pesaran, M. H., & Shin, Y. (1999). *An Autoregressive Distributed Lag Modeling Approach to Cointegration Analysis*. In S. Strom, A. Holly, & P. Diamond (Eds.), *Centennial Volume of Ragnar Frisch* (pp. 371-413). Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Pesaran, M. H., Shin, Y., & Smith, R. J. (2001). Bounds Testing Approaches to the Analysis of Level Relationships. *Journal of Applied Econometrics*, 16(3), 289–326. <https://doi.org/10.1002/jae.616>
- Pesaran, M. H., & Smith, R. P. (1998). Structural Analysis of Cointegrating VAR's. *Journal of Economic Surveys*, 12(5), 471-505. <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-6419.00065>
- Phillips, P. C., & Perron, P. (1988). Testing for a Unit Root in Time Series Regression. *Biometrika*, 75(2), 335-346. <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/75.2.335>
- Ramsey, J. B. (1969). Tests for Specification Errors in Classical Linear Least-Squares Regression Analysis. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society Series B: (Methodological)*, 31(2), 350-371. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.2517-6161.1969.tb00796.x>
- Udoh, E. A., & Ogbuagu, U. R. (2012). Financial Sector Development and Industrial Production in Nigeria (1970-2009): An ARDL Cointegration Approach. *Journal of Applied Finance and Banking*, 2, 1-4.
- Yua, P., Yua, H., & Ogbonna, K. S. (2021). Deposit Money Bank's Credit and Industrial Output in Nigeria. *International Journal of Economics, Business and Management Research*, 5(2), 147-156.

CHAPTER 9

UNRAVELING THE MONETARY POLICY- EMPLOYMENT RELATIONSHIP IN NORWAY: AN EMPIRICAL ANALYSIS USING ARDL MODELING

ÖZGÜR ÖZAYDIN¹

ANIL DAĞDEMİR²

INTRODUCTION

The link between broad money supply and employment has been a long-standing topic of interest among researchers in the economic literature. Investigating the effects of money supply on employment is extremely important in terms of shedding light on a better understanding of the macroeconomic interaction between monetary policy and labor market dynamics and, thereby, providing insights to policy makers on how money supply can be used to affect the employment level of the economy. In this context, there are various theoretical perspectives on how the interaction between monetary policy and employment occurs.

To begin with, the Keynesian perspective suggests that an expansion in the money supply will have a positive impact on employment. This argument is based on the assumption that an increase in the money supply leads to a decrease in interest rates, which makes it more cost-effective for companies to borrow and encourages companies to invest, and these investments lead to the production of more output and increased employment. Furthermore, Keynesian theory suggests that falling interest rates due to monetary expansion will reduce the cost of borrowing and encourage households to make more and bigger consumption expenditures. Therefore, according to this view, increased consumption demand will encourage firms to increase production, which will lead to firms increasing employment. To put it briefly, the Keynesian perspective emphasizes that employment will increase as a result of the chain reactions that start with the increase in money supply, and therefore monetary policy can be used as an effective tool to affect the employment level of the economy.

¹ Asst.Prof.Dr., Ondokuz Mayıs University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Economics; e-mail:ozaydin@omu.edu.tr , ORCID ID: 0000-0003-0579-9432

² Research Assistant, Ondokuz Mayıs University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Economics; e-mail: anil.dagdemir@omu.edu.tr; ORCID ID: 0000-0002-1087-0849

Contrary to the Keynesian perspective, from the Classical point of view, it is proposed that an excessive increase in the money supply will potentially lead to negative effects on employment. This perspective is based on the assumption that significant increases in the money supply can ultimately cause inflation, and that over time, inflation will reduce purchasing power, leading to a decrease in household consumption demand, which will cause a decrease in firms' incomes, forcing firms to reduce costs by reducing employment. In addition, this perspective argues that inflation resulting from the augmentation of the money supply will lead to a rise in uncertainty in the economy, and this uncertainty will make firms cautious about making new investments, resulting a decrease in employment.

On the other hand, contrary to the arguments of Keynesian and Classical approaches, New Classical Economics theory suggests that there is a neutral relationship between money supply and employment. This argument is based on the concept of rational expectations. This view argues that if central banks change the money supply, economic agents will quickly adjust their expectations and behavior in light of the adopted expectations, and this adjustment will eliminate the possible effects of the change in money supply on employment. According to this approach, for example, if an increase in the money supply is expected to lead to inflation, firms may initially want to increase wages and employment by anticipating that the prices of the goods they sell will increase in the future. However, as workers adjust their behavior around inflation expectations and demand higher wages, the initial employment increase will stabilize. As a result, short run employment changes resulting from fluctuations in the money supply will be corrected as the economy adapts to new conditions within the framework of rational expectations, becoming neutral in the long term.

The aim of this paper, utilizing a dataset spanning from 1972 to 2022, is to empirically investigate the relationship between broad money supply and employment in the context of Norway. This research employs the Autoregressive Distributed Lag (ARDL) model to offer a comprehensive analysis of the short-term and long-term dynamics. By exploring the possibility of a structural break in the relationship, this study expands the existing literature and provides a nuanced understanding of the interaction between broad money and employment.

The structure of the paper is as follows. Following this introduction, the paper proceeds to explore a literature review, consolidating current research on the correlation between monetary policy and employment. Following this, dedicated sections methodically elucidate the methodology, providing a detailed description of the econometric techniques employed and in-depth analysis of the results, accompanied by a discussion of the findings within the specific context

of Norway. The final chapter of the study encompasses conclusions, policy implications, and recommendations for future research.

LITERATURE REVIEW

Some of the few empirical studies examining the relationship between broad money supply and employment find that the relationship between the two variables is positive, negative, or insignificant. Niken et al. (2023) find no significant short-run link in Ethiopia, while Okeke & Chukwu (2021) report a positive connection in Nigeria. Adeem et al. (2019) observes a negative short-run relationship in Pakistan, contrasting Asaleye et al. (2018), who notes a positive relationship in Nigeria. Mulligan (2016) identifies a negative relationship between Canada and the USA, whereas Benazic & Rami (2016) report an insignificant relationship in Croatia. Additionally, Attamah et al. (2015) find no significant effect in Nigeria, Aliero et al. (2013) also for Nigeria describe a positive short-run but negative long-run relationship, and Shabbir et al. (2011) suggests a positive relationship in Pakistan.

Table 1. Literature Review

Research	Period	Frequen	Sampl	Method(Findings
Niken et al. (2023)	1980-2020	Yearly	Ethiopia	VAR, ARDL	Insignificant relationship between Unemployment and broad money in short-run
Okeke & Chukwu (2021)	1986-2018	Yearly	Nigeria	ARDL	Positive relationship between M2 and employment
Adeem et al. (2019)	1972-2016	Yearly	Pakistan	ARDL	Negative relationship between M2 and employment in short-run
Asaley et al. (2018)	1981-2016	Yearly	Nigeria	ARDL, VAR	Positive relationship between M2 and employment
Mulligan (2016)	1980-2014	Monthly	Canada, USA	VAR	Negative relationship between M2 and employment
Benazić & Rami (2016)	1998Q1-2017Q3	Quarterly	Croatia	ARDL	Insignificant relationship between Unemployment and M1
Attamah et al. (2015)	1980-2013	Yearly	Nigeria	OLS	Insignificant relationship
Aliero et al. (2013)	1980-2011	Yearly	Nigeria	ARDL	Positive relationship between M2 and unemployment in short-run but negative in long-run

Shabbir et al. (2011)	1973-2007	Yearly	Pakistan	ARDL	Positive relationship between M2 and unemployment
-----------------------	-----------	--------	----------	------	---------------------------------------------------

MODEL, DATA, METHODOLOGY and FINDINGS

Model

The study employs Equation (1) as the underlying mathematical model, which provides a comprehensive representation of the relationship under analysis.

$$EM_t = f(M_t) \quad (1)$$

Equation (1), serving as a fundamental tool for understanding the central dynamics of the study, captures the interplay between EM_t which denotes the employment level, and M_t represents the broad money.

The transformed version of this model, capturing the logarithmic relationship between employment and broad money, is delineated in Equation (2).

$$em_t = \alpha_{0a} + \alpha_{1a}m_t + \epsilon_{0t} \quad (2)$$

Within Equation (2), em_t denotes the logarithmic transformation of employment, while m_t symbolizes the logarithmically transformed broad money supply. The α coefficients are estimators derived from the Ordinary Least Squares method, providing measures of association between variables, and ϵ_{0t} is the term representing random fluctuations or disturbances that are unexplained by the model.

Data

The paper examines how monetary policy affected Norwegian employment by utilizing the World Development Indicators database data from 1972 to 2022. The per capita broad money supply which is used as a proxy for monetary policy is Measured in US dollars at constant 2015 prices, while total number of employees is used as a surrogate for employment.

Methodology and Findings

Within the framework of the methodology used in the study, the stationarity properties of the per capita money supply (m_t) and employment (em_t) time series data, which were the subject of the study, were examined through unit root tests. Then, the most appropriate econometric method, in accordance with the results obtained from unit root tests, was determined to investigate the effects of monetary policy on employment for the Norwegian economy.

Stationarity Tests

To evade the issue of spurious regression problem, the unit root properties of the per capita money supply (m_t) and employment (em_t) series are checked with the Augmented Dickey-Fuller (ADF), Phillips-Perron (PP), and Zivot-Andrews tests, ensuring the robustness of the empirical findings. The ADF test results are tabulated in Table 2 and Table 3. The PP test findings are documented in Table 4 and Table 5. Finally, the outcome of the Zivot-Andrews test, which account for structural breaks, are detailed in Table 6 and Table 7.

The Augmented Dickey-Fuller (ADF) test outcomes, as illustrated in Table 2, present the stationarity properties of the variables in the intercept and intercept with trend models. The ADF statistics indicate that, for the level variables, the employment variable em exhibited a test statistic of -0.20 with 7 lags and -2.76 with 10 lags, whereas the broad money supply variable m showed -2.21 with 2 lags and -1.16 with 2 lags, indicating a lack of stationarity.

Table 2. ADF³ Test Outcomes

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
em	-0.20 (7)	-2.76 (10)
Δem	-3.76*** (6)	-3.67** (6)
m	-2.21 (2)	-1.16 (2)
Δm	-5.89*** (1)	-6.29*** (1)

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance level, respectively.

The first differences of these variables, denoted as Δem and Δm , however, demonstrate clear stationarity with test statistics of -3.76 (6 lags) and -3.67 (6 lags) for Δem , significant at the 1% and 5% levels, respectively, and -5.89 (1 lag) and -6.29 (1 lag) for Δm , significant at the 1% level.

Table 3. Stationarity Level (ADF Test)

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
em	I (1)***	I (1)**
m	I (1)***	I (1)***

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance level, respectively.

³ Maximum lag length for ADF unit root test (Dickey & Fuller, 1979) is determined as 10 lags and optimal lag length is chosen by using Akaike Information Criterion (Akaike, 1973, 1998), the values in parentheses are the chosen lag lengths.

Table 3 consolidates these findings, illustrating that the variables *em* and *m* are integrated of order one, I(1), which shows that their first differences achieve stationarity.

Table 4. PP⁴ Test Outcomes

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
<i>em</i>	-0.71 (1)	-2.07 (0)
Δem	-3.87*** (7)	-3.83** (7)
<i>m</i>	-2.35 (8)	-1.28 (3)
Δm	-7.11*** (5)	-8.25*** (9)

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance level, respectively.

In Table 4, the level variables, specifically *em* and *m* exhibit PP test statistics of -0.71 (1 lag) and -2.35 (8 lags) under the intercept model, and -2.07 (0 lags) and -1.28 (3 lags) under the intercept and trend model respectively. These statistics suggest a lack of stationarity in their level forms. Conversely, the differenced variables, Δem and Δm , demonstrate compelling evidence of stationarity, with PP test statistics of -3.87 (7 lags) and -7.11 (5 lags) under the intercept model, significant at the 1% level, and -3.83 (7 lags) and -8.25 (9 lags) under the intercept and trend model, significant at the 5% and 1% levels, respectively.

Table 5. Stationarity Level (PP Test)

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
<i>em</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) **
<i>m</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) ***

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance level, respectively.

Table 5 further solidifies these findings, indicating that both *em* and *m* are integrated of order one, I(1), confirming that stationarity is achieved through differencing. This analysis underscores the essential need for differencing these variables to attain stationarity, a prerequisite for reliable econometric modeling.

⁴ Bartlett kernel (Bartlett, 1948, 1950) is used as the spectral estimation method and Newey-West (Newey and West, 1986) bandwidth is used as the bandwidth for P-P (Phillips and Perron, 1988) unit root test, the values in parentheses are the chosen lag lengths.

Table 6. ZA⁵ Test Outcomes

Variable	Intercept		Intercept & Trend	
	test statistic	break year	test statistic	break year
<i>em</i>	-4.5 (10)	1991	-4.8 (10)	2005
Δem	-5.18** (6)	1988	-5.86*** (6)	1996
<i>m</i>	-3.62 (2)	1985	-3.79 (2)	1985
Δm	-6.54*** (1)	1984	-6.63*** (1)	1988

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance level, respectively.

The Zivot-Andrews unit root test results, detailed in Tables 6 and 7, offer a nuanced perspective on the stationarity of the examined variables, incorporating structural breaks into the analysis. Table 6 reveals that for the level variables *em* and *m*, the Zivot-Andrew's test statistics are -4.5 (10 lags, break year 1991) and -3.62 (2 lags, break year 1985) under the intercept model, and -4.8 (10 lags, break year 2005) and -3.79 (2 lags, break year 1985) under the intercept and trend model, respectively. These results suggest non-stationarity in their level forms even when accounting for structural breaks.

The differenced variables Δem and Δm exhibit clear signs of stationarity post-differencing, with test statistics of -5.18** (6 lags, break year 1988), significant at the 5% level, and -6.54*** (1 lag, break year 1984), significant at the 5% level, under the intercept model, and -5.86*** (6 lags, break year 1996) and -6.63*** (1 lag, break year 1988) under the intercept and trend model, significant at the 1% level. These findings, highlight the achievement of stationarity through differencing, even in the presence of structural breaks.

Table 7 consolidates these insights, affirming that the variables *em* and *m* integrated of order one, I(1), with the presence of structural breaks. The integration of structural breaks into the analysis not only provides a more comprehensive understanding of the variables' stationarity properties but also underscores the complexities inherent in time series data affected by external shocks or policy changes.

⁵ Maximum lag length for ZA unit root test (Zivot & Andrews, 1992) is determined as 10 lags.

Table 7. Stationarity Level (ZA Test)

Variable	Intercept	Intercept & Trend
<i>em</i>	I (1) **	I (1) ***
<i>m</i>	I (1) ***	I (1) ***

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance level, respectively.

In summarizing the unit root test results, both employment (*em*) and per capita money supply (*m*) revealed as I(1) variables.

ARDL⁶ Model

In this study, the Autoregressive Distributed Lag (ARDL) method, as it fits the data set utilized and due to its various advantages, is preferred to investigate the dynamics between monetary policy and labor market for the Norwegian case. To begin with, the first advantage of the ARDL approach is its capability of producing unbiased and robust estimates even when the sample size is limited, as in this study. Another important advantage of the ARDL approach is that it allows both short-term and long-term dynamics to be captured within a single integrated framework. Finally, eliminating potential endogeneity problems by including lagged dependent variables as explanatory variables in the model is another important advantage of the ARDL approach.

The UECM form of the ARDL model used in this study is given in Equation (3)

$$\Delta em = \alpha_{0b} + \sum_{i=1}^{c_1} \alpha_{1b} \Delta em_{t-i} + \sum_{i=0}^{c_2} \alpha_{2b} \Delta m_{t-i} + \alpha_{3b} d_{1988} + \alpha_{4b} T + \beta_{1b} em_{t-1} + \beta_{2b} m_{t-1} + \epsilon_{1t} \quad (3)$$

where, *em* represents the total employment, while *m* signifies the per capita broad money. The *c*'s in the equation denote the selected lag lengths, the coefficients α 's and β 's, derived through least squares estimation. *T* is the trend variable and *d*₁₉₈₈ is the dummy variable representing a structural break in the year 1988 based on the Zivot-Andrews unit root test's intercept model findings, and finally ϵ_{1t} is the error term.

Robustness of the Selected Model

In this study, the ARDL (2,1) model was selected as the best fitting model with appropriate lag structure based on the Akaike Information Criterion (AIC).

⁶ Pesaran and Pesaran (1997), Pesaran and Smith (1998), Pesaran and Shin (1995,1998,1999) and Pesaran et al. (2001) .

Prior to diving further into the analysis, the model was tested through a suite of diagnostic tests to affirm reliability and robustness of the ARDL (2,1) model. Jarque-Bera test is employed for normality of residuals, the Breusch-Godfrey test is utilized for serial correlation, the ARCH test is used to test for heteroskedasticity, and the Ramsey RESET test is performed for the model misspecification. The outcomes of these tests are detailed in Table 8.

Table 8. Diagnostic Test Findings

Test	Test Statistic	Prob.	Test	Test Statistic	Prob.
χ^2_N (Jarque-Bera ⁷)	1.18	0.55	χ^2_{HS} (ARCH ⁸)	0.41	0.52
χ^2_{Sc} (Breusch-Godfrey ⁹)	3.92	0.054	χ^2_{MM} (Ramsey RESET ¹⁰)	1.53	0.22

According to the results presented in Table 8, the Jarque-Bera test, produced a statistic of 1.18 and a corresponding p-value of 0.55, indicating the normal distribution of the residuals. Subsequently, the ARCH test findings, with a statistic of 0.41 and a p-value of 0.52, affirmed the nonexistence of heteroskedasticity. Furthermore, the Breusch-Godfrey test, with a computed statistic of 3.92 and a p-value of 0.054, suggested no serial correlation in the residuals. Lastly, Ramsey RESET test produced a test statistic of 1.53 and a probability of 0.22, proposing that the model did not suffer from omitted variables or functional form misspecification.

To summarize, all the diagnostic tests provided in Table 8 collectively validated the statistical reliability of the ARDL (2,1) model.

Subsequent to the diagnostic checks, the stability of the parameters was assessed through the implementation of CUSUM and CUSUMSQ tests. Figure 1 visually displays the findings of these tests, for the ARDL (2,1) model.

⁷ (Jarque & Bera, 1980)

⁸ (Engle, 1982)

⁹ (Breusch & Godfrey, 1981)

¹⁰ (Ramsey, 1969).

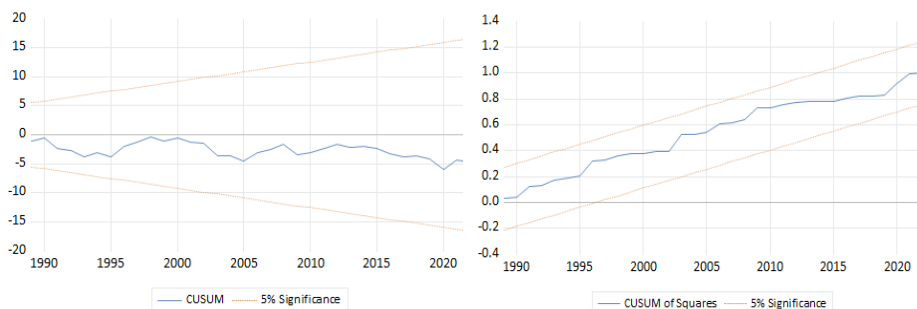


Figure 1. CUSUM¹¹ and CUSUMSQR¹² Test Findings

As seen from the left part of the Figure 1, the CUSUM line, stayed within the critical bounds at the 5% significance level confirming that the coefficients of the model remain stable throughout the study period. Similarly, the CUSUMSQR line, which observes the cumulative sum of the squares of the recursive residuals, also stays within the 5% significance bounds. This consistency reinforces the stability of the variance of the residuals over time.

In sum, the results from Figure 1, through the CUSUM and CUSUMSQR tests, provide substantial evidence of the stability of the ARDL model's parameters.

Bounds Test

In this study, the bounds test methodology is employed to examine the existence of the cointegration between per capita broad money and employment.

The bounds testing procedure, integral to the ARDL framework, involves estimating an unrestricted error correction model (UECM) and subsequently checking the significance of the lagged levels of the variables through F and t tests. While utilizing the bounds testing procedure the critical values for the F-statistic and t-statistic are sourced from pre-tabulated values and the decision regarding the presence of co-integration is based on comparing the calculated test statistic against these upper and lower bounds. If the computed F-statistic and t-statistic exceed the critical upper bound values for a given significance level, it suggests that the variables are cointegrated, meaning they move together in the long run.

The findings of the bounds testing procedure in this study are detailed in Table 9.

¹¹ (Page,1954)

¹² (Brown et.al, 1975)

Table 9. Bounds Test Findings

Test	Calculated Test Statistic	Lower-bound Value (1%)	Upper-bound
<i>F</i>	12.73***	9.89	10.97
Test	Calculated Test Statistic	Lower-bound Value (1%)	Upper-bound
<i>t</i>	-5.02***	-3.96	-4.26

***, ** indicates stationarity at 1%, and 5% significance

*** indicates statistical significance at 1% level.

As can be seen from the bounds test findings presented in Table 9, the calculated F-statistic, standing at 12.73, surpassed the upper-bound value at the 1% significance level (10.97) providing evidence of cointegration between per capita broad money and employment for the case of Norway. Additionally, the t-statistic, recorded at -5.02, also exceeded the critical upper-bound value at the 1% significance level (-4.26), in absolute values, further reinforcing the evidence of cointegration.

In essence, the bounds test results indicated the presence of a cointegration relationship between the variables under consideration, where per capita broad money is the long run forcing variable of employment.

Error Correction Model

Following the validation of the model's robustness and the establishment of cointegration between per capita broad money and employment, an Error Correction Model (ECM) is utilized. The findings from the ECM analysis are presented in Table 10.

According to the findings from the Error Correction Model (ECM), as presented in Table 10, the coefficient of the one period lagged error correction term denoted as γ_{t-1} in the model, carried a coefficient of -0.30 with a statistically significant t-statistic of -5.10 at the 1% level, suggesting that any short-term deviations from the long-term equilibrium are corrected at a rate of approximately 30% annually.

Furthermore, all the other variables except from Δm_t , namely Δem_{t-1} , d_{1988} , C and T , are also found to be statistically significant at the 1% level.

Table 10. Estimations of the ECM Model

Variable	Coefficient	St. Error	t-statistics	p-value
γ_{t-1}	-0.30	0.05	-5.10	0.00***
Δem_{t-1}	0.44	0.11	4.04	0.00***
Δm_t	0.00	0.02	-0.09	0.92
d_{1988}	-0.032	0.007	-4.72	0.00***
C	3.87	0.75	5.11	0.00***
T	0.002	0.0004	5.33	0.00***
Important Statistics				
$\overline{R^2}$	0.49		F	10.41***
RSS	0.005		DW	2.29

*** indicates statistical significance at 1% level.

Long Run Model

Following the estimation of the ECM, the Long Run form of the ARDL (2,1), is estimated to explore the enduring relationship between per capita broad money and employment for the case of Norway. The findings derived from this long-run estimation are presented in Table 11.

Table 11. Long Run Model Estimations

Variable	Coefficient	St. Error	t-statistics	p-value
m_t	0.17	0.10	1.72	0.09*

* Indicates statistical significance at 10% level.

The coefficient for the variable m (per capita broad money) stands at 0.17, indicating a positive long-term relationship with the dependent variable, albeit with a p-value of 0.09, slightly below the 10% significance threshold. This coefficient suggests a positive but weak long-term influence of monetary conditions on the employment scenario.

This outcome, while indicative of a certain directional relationship, calls for cautious interpretation due to its borderline statistical significance. The implication is that while per capita broad money changes 1%, it causes a 0.17% change in the employment level within the same direction.

CONCLUSION and POLICY IMPLICATIONS

This study has meticulously employed appropriate econometric methodologies to unravel the relationship between monetary expansion and

employment in Norway. The unit root tests, encompassing both the Augmented Dickey-Fuller, Phillips-Perron and Zivot Andrews approaches, indicated that the variables under consideration were non-stationary at levels but achieved stationarity upon first differencing. Subsequently, the Autoregressive Distributed Lag (ARDL) model, specifically ARDL (2,1), was selected based on the Akaike Information Criterion. This model not only passed various diagnostic tests, confirming no serial correlation, heteroskedasticity, model misspecification, or non-normality of residuals, but also successfully withstood parameter stability tests, including CUSUM and CUSUMSQ. The Error Correction Model (ECM) component of the ARDL model revealed significant short-term dynamics with a notable adjustment coefficient, indicating a moderate speed of return to equilibrium following shocks. The long-run findings highlighted a positive, though not very powerful in magnitude, relationship between broad money and employment, suggesting a relatively weak impact of monetary policy on the labor market.

The findings obtained within the scope of the study showed that monetary expansion had a statistically significant effect on employment in the Norwegian economy during the review period. This shows that Norwegian policymakers should take into account the direct effects of money supply on the labor market when designing and implementing monetary policy. On the other hand, Norwegian economic policy designers should use monetary policy as an efficient tool to stimulate employment, despite the delayed and limited impact of monetary expansion on employment.

Consequently, although the findings obtained within the scope of the study have been shown to be statistically reliable, the limitations of the study should be taken into consideration when evaluating policy recommendations based on these findings. In this context, it should not be overlooked that the study focuses only on a single country and on a specific time period from 1972 to 2022, that only the effects of money supply per capita are evaluated when explaining employment, and that a linear relationship between the variables is assumed. In this context, for future studies on the subject, it is recommended to use non-linear models as well as linear models, expand the scope of the study to more than one country or country groups, examine the relationship in question in the context of sub-periods, and add wage level, capital use, energy consumption, foreign trade, income, etc. to the model to contribute to a more holistic understanding of the relationship between employment and monetary policy, as well as the determinants of employment.

REFERENCES

- Adeem, M. A., Sibte-Ali, M., & Akhtar, R. (2019). Socio-Economic Determinants of Employment: A Case Study of Pakistan. *Journal of Accounting and Finance in Emerging Economies*, 5(1), 71-82.
- Akaike, H. (1973). Information Theory and an Extension of the Maximum Likelihood Principle. In B.N. Petrow & F. Czaki (Eds.), *Proceedings of the 2nd International Symposium on Information* (pp. xx-xx). Akademiai Kiado, Budapest.
- Akaike, H. (1998). Information Theory and an Extension of the Maximum Likelihood Principle. In *Selected Papers of Hirotugu Akaike* (pp. 199-213). Springer, New York, NY. https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-1694-0_15
- Aliero, H. M., Ibrahim, S. S., & Shuaibu, M. (2013). An Empirical Investigation into the Relationship Between Financial Sector Development and Unemployment in Nigeria. *Asian Economic and Financial Review*, 3(10), 1361-1370.
- Asaley, A. J., Popoola, O., Lawal, A. I., Ogundipe, A. A., & Ezenwoke, O. (2018). The Credit Channels of Monetary Policy Transmission: Implications on Output and Employment in Nigeria. *Banks and Bank Systems*, 13(4), 103-118. [https://doi.org/10.21511/bbs.13\(4\).2018.10](https://doi.org/10.21511/bbs.13(4).2018.10)
- Attamah, T., Igwe, A., & Ukpere, U. (2015). The Impact of Fiscal and Monetary Policies on Unemployment Problem in Nigeria (Managerial Economic Perspective). *Risk Governance & Control: Financial Markets & Institutions*, 5(2-1), 101-109. <https://doi.org/10.22495/rgcv5i2c1art4>
- Bartlett, M. S. (1948). Smoothing Periodograms from Time-Series with Continuous Spectra. *Nature*, 161(4096), 686-687. <https://doi.org/10.1038/161686a0>
- Bartlett, M. S. (1950). Periodogram Analysis and Continuous Spectra. *Biometrika*, 37(1/2), 1-16. <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/37.1-2.1>.
- Benazić, M., & Rami, J. (2016). Monetary Policy and Unemployment in Croatia. *Economic Research-Ekonomska Istraživanja*, 29(1), 1038-1049. <https://doi.org/10.1080/1331677x.2016.1211955>
- Breusch, T. S., & Godfrey, L. G. (1981). A Review of Recent Work on Testing for Autocorrelation in Dynamic Simultaneous Models. In D. Currie, R. Nobay, & D. Peel (Eds.), *Macroeconomic Analysis: Essays in Macroeconomics and Econometrics* (pp. 63-105). Croom Helm.
- Brown, R. L., Durbin, J., & Evans, J. M. (1975). Techniques for Testing the Constancy of Regression Relationships over Time. *Journal of the Royal*

- Statistical Society Series B (Methodological), 37(2), 149-163. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.2517-6161.1975.tb01532.x>
- Durbin, J., & Watson, G. S. (1950). Testing for Serial Correlation in Least Squares Regression: I. *Biometrika*, 37(3/4), 409-428. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2332391>
- Engle, Robert F. (1982). Autoregressive Conditional Heteroscedasticity with Estimates of the Variance of United Kingdom Inflation. *Econometrica*, 50(4), 987-1007. <https://doi.org/10.2307/1912773>
- Jarque, C. M., & Bera, A. K. (1980). Efficient Tests for Normality, Homoscedasticity and Serial Independence of Regression Residuals. *Economics Letters*, 6(3), 255-259. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0165-1765\(80\)90024-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/0165-1765(80)90024-5)
- Mulligan, R.F. (2016). An Empirical Comparison of Canadian-American Business Cycle Fluctuations with Special Reference to the Phillips Curve. In *Studies in Austrian Macroeconomics (Advances in Austrian Economics, Vol. 20)* (pp. 163-194). Emerald Group Publishing Limited, Leeds. <https://doi.org/10.1108/S1529-213420160000020008>
- Newey, W. K., & West, K. D. (1986). A Simple, Positive Semi-Definite, Heteroskedasticity and Autocorrelation Consistent Covariance Matrix. *Econometrica*, 55(3), 703-708. <https://doi.org/10.2307/1913610>
- Niken, K., Haile, M. A., & Berecha, A. (2023). On the Nexus of Inflation, Unemployment, and Economic Growth in Ethiopia. *Heliyon*, 9(4), e15271. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.heliyon.2023.e15271>
- Okeke, I. C., & Chukwu, K. O. (2021). Effect of Monetary Policy on the Rate of Unemployment in Nigerian Economy (1986-2018). *Journal of Global Accounting*, 7(1), 1-13. Retrieved from <https://journals.unizik.edu.ng/joga/article/view/1168>
- Page, E. S. (1954). Continuous Inspection Schemes. *Biometrika*, 41(1/2), 100-115. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2333009>.
- Pesaran, M. H., & Pesaran, B. (1997). *Working with Microfit 4.0: An Interactive Econometric Software Package (DOS and Windows Versions)*. Oxford University Press, Oxford.
- Pesaran, M. H., & Shin, Y. (1995). *An Autoregressive Distributed Lag Modeling Approach to Cointegration Analysis (Vol. 9514)*. Department of Applied Economics, University of Cambridge, Cambridge, UK.
- Pesaran, M. H., & Shin, Y. (1998). Generalized Impulse Response Analysis in Linear Multivariate Models. *Economics Letters*, 58(1), 17-29. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0165-1765\(97\)00214-0](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0165-1765(97)00214-0)

- Pesaran, M.H., and Shin, Y. (1999). An Autoregressive Distributed Lag Modeling Approach To Cointegration Analysis. Strom, S., Holly, A., and Diamond, P. (Ed.), in Centennial volume of Rangar Frisch (p. 371-413). Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Pesaran, M. H., Shin, Y., & Smith, R. J. (2001). Bounds Testing Approaches to the Analysis of Level Relationships. *Journal of Applied Econometrics*, 16(3), 289–326. <https://doi.org/10.1002/jae.616>
- Pesaran, M. H., & Smith, R. P. (1998). Structural Analysis of Cointegrating VARs. *Journal of Economic Surveys*, 12(5), 471-505. <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-6419.00065>
- Phillips, P. C., & Perron, P. (1988). Testing for a Unit Root in Time Series Regression. *Biometrika*, 75(2), 335-346. <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/75.2.335>
- Ramsey, J. B. (1969). Tests for Specification Errors in Classical Linear Least-Squares Regression Analysis. *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society Series B: (Methodological)*, 31(2), 350-371. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.2517-6161.1969.tb00796.x>
- Shabbir, G., Anwar, S., Hussain, Z., & Imran, M. (2011). Contribution of Financial Sector Development in Reducing Unemployment in Pakistan. *International Journal of Economics and Finance*, 4(1). <https://doi.org/10.5539/ijef.v4n1p260>
- Zivot, E., & Andrews, D. W. K. (1992). Further Evidence on the Great Crash, the Oil Price Shock, and the Unit-Root Hypothesis. *Journal of Business and Economic Statistics*, 10(3), 251-270. <https://doi.org/10.1198/073500102753410372>

CHAPTER 10

HIGH SCHOOL STUDENTS' INSIGHTS INTO READING ALOUD FOR LANGUAGE LEARNING

RAMAZAN GÜZEL¹

Abstract

Numerous studies have explored the impact of reading aloud on language competence, employing various metrics such as teacher and student evaluations, pre-tests, post-tests, and performance assessments. Despite this, there is a notable gap in research focusing on students' own perceptions of reading aloud. This study seeks to fill this void by investigating high school students' attitudes towards reading aloud, considering factors such as gender, class, and school affiliation. The research involved 53, 9th-grade students and 70, 12th-grade students. The study aimed to uncover students' purposes for reading aloud, the perceived advantages of this practice, and their preferences in terms of reading aloud. Utilizing a perception scale and conducting semi-structured interviews, both qualitative and quantitative data were gathered. The findings reveal a generally positive outlook among high school students regarding reading aloud. Moreover, it became evident that female students exhibit a greater inclination towards, utilization of, and benefit from reading aloud compared to their male counterparts. Another noteworthy discovery is that 9th-grade students exhibit a higher preference for, engagement in, and benefit from reading aloud in comparison to their 12th-grade counterparts.

Keywords: Reading aloud, language competence, student perceptions

Introduction

In the primary school curriculum, particularly in Turkish language lessons, reading aloud plays a crucial role in the acquisition of Turkish as a mother tongue. This activity serves as a vital vehicle for language development, considering that the foundation of learning our mother tongue lies in listening and subsequently imitating the spoken language. To effectively imitate words, one must first absorb them through attentive listening and encode them in their minds. In this context, both teachers and students engaging in reading aloud practices emerge as

¹ Öğretim Görevlisi, Sinop Üniversitesi Yabancı Diller Yüksekokulu, rguzel@sinop.edu.tr, 0000-0002-0622-0894

invaluable resources within the classroom setting. The use of the reading aloud technique by many primary school teachers underscores its significance as a method that facilitates active listening and provides a platform for imitating words and sentences, thereby contributing substantially to the language learning process.

The synchronized engagement of our eyes, ears, and mouth during the act of reading aloud raises a compelling question: can this coordinated effort among these sensory organs impact the brain and enhance the process of learning a second language? Pankey's (2000) investigation into the benefits of reading aloud activities in kindergarten emphasize the positive influence of parental involvement in reading aloud at home. Such engagement aids children in articulating new words, constructing complex sentences, and developing narrative skills. Building on this, Grabe (1991) and Paran (1996) assert that intensive reading aloud activities, particularly for language learners in the beginner level, contribute to automatic word recognition in the target language and enhance text analysis skills. Sharpe (2001) emphasizes that beyond facilitating comprehension, such activities also serve to boost student motivation within the classroom. Furthermore, the link between sound and alphabetic improvement through reading aloud is highlighted as a means of aiding reading skills. Gibson (2008) adds another layer to the benefits by pointing out that reading aloud is a valuable tool for enhancing writing skills through oral proofreading. Moreover, this practice proves beneficial for anxious learners, instilling confidence in their ability to articulate words and sentences.

Notably, when reading aloud activities are guided by teachers, they create a sense of security and comfort for students, encouraging a more confident transition into spoken language. In essence, the holistic engagement of sensory organs through reading aloud emerges as a multifaceted strategy with far-reaching cognitive and motivational benefits for language learners. Furthermore, reading aloud to students in intermediate and secondary classrooms has been found to have numerous benefits, including the development of imagination, making text easier to understand, and providing a calming and relaxing experience for students (Grant, 1994)

The importance of reading aloud in language acquisition has been well-established in the context of acquiring one's mother tongue. However, it is unclear whether reading aloud has a similar effect on language competence while learning a second language. Krashen (1982) distinguishes between conscious learning, which takes place through traditional teaching methods, and acquisition, which is the natural learning of the mother tongue. He argues that language teaching should be similar to how children learn their mother tongue. Since reading aloud

plays an important role in the acquisition of the mother tongue, it can also be effective in learning a second language. Reading aloud allows students to articulate the sounds of the target language, which can help them develop their language skills.

The effects of reading aloud on students' language skills have been the subject of much research and remain controversial among teachers and researchers. While many studies on reading aloud provide positive evidence, these results are often based on performance assessments and observation questionnaires. However, to truly understand the positive effects of reading aloud on language skills, it is essential to consider students' perceptions. Therefore, the aim of this study is to determine high school students' perceptions of reading aloud.

Literature Review

The process of reading involves deriving meaning from written symbols, encompassing word recognition, construction, and comprehension. It can be categorized into three types: silent reading, reading aloud, and inside reading. Reading aloud is considered an important tool, particularly in the early stages of language learning, as it motivates students and enhances their knowledge on specific subjects (Crockton, 2010). Reading aloud has a significant impact on language development, as highlighted by a systematic review that identified various language-related skills benefiting from this practice, including receptive vocabulary and language acquisition (Batini et al, 2020). Even among older learners, a case study conducted in Uganda explored how reading aloud was perceived and experienced as a classroom activity, emphasizing its importance (Nambi, 2019).

Frick (1986) acknowledges reading aloud as a valuable and enjoyable tool that offers students a pleasurable and relaxing experience. This practice has been recommended for both home and classroom settings for many years (Jacobs et al, 2000) and has been extensively researched, particularly regarding its impact on verbal fluency. Gibson (2008) conducted a study identifying four key academic abilities that are enhanced through reading aloud: speaking practice, establishing connections between written and spoken language, diagnosing pronunciation problems, and improving both fluency and overall reading skills (p.34). Morrow and Smith (1990) emphasize the importance of one-on-one interaction during read-aloud activities, stating that children actively engage when provided with this personalized approach. McCormick's (1977) research further supports the positive impact of reading aloud, providing evidence of a direct relationship between this practice and improved reading performance, language development, and the cultivation of reading interests. Rasinski's insights, as cited in Fancher

(2007), highlight a range of benefits associated with reading aloud, including building confidence, fostering a sense of community, bridging written and spoken language, strengthening decoding skills, promoting fluency, enhancing comprehension, and offering teachers valuable insights into the reading processes occurring in the classroom.

In addition to its benefits for students, reading aloud serves as a valuable tool for teachers in monitoring students' reading performance. By having students read aloud, teachers can directly assess their ability to pronounce words and sentences accurately. When students read silently, there is uncertainty about whether they have covered the entire text. Some students may invest more time and effort in silent reading, potentially hindering their ability to read the entire text thoroughly (Billington et al., 2004). Therefore, incorporating reading aloud into assessments provides teachers with a clearer understanding of students' reading skills and ensures a more accurate evaluation of their comprehension and pronunciation proficiency.

Some studies highlight the considerable benefits of readers audibly engaging with the text, emphasizing the advantages of hearing oneself while reading aloud. According to Kragler (1995) and Swalm (1972), the act of reading aloud not only demands intense concentration but also significantly aids in the learning process. Beyond concentration, reading aloud provides students with a practical avenue to practice their second language (L2), especially in situations where exposure to the L2 is limited. Danesi (2000) emphasize the utility of reading aloud in bridging gaps in speaking practice when opportunities for L2 exposure are scarce. The value of reading aloud extends beyond practical language application; it offers students the chance to derive enjoyment from the act of reading itself (Johns, 1978). The regular incorporation of reading aloud into the classroom, as advocated by Casteel (1989), can serve as a motivational tool, sparking interest in other subject areas. Huang (2010) outlines various functions of reading aloud in foreign language teaching, highlighting its role in practicing pronunciation, enhancing oral fluency, deepening understanding, fortifying knowledge, and contributing to a positive classroom atmosphere. Alshumaimeri's (2011) study emphasizes that reading aloud contributes to word memorization and retention, fostering a deeper understanding of the text. Additionally, he posits that the act of reading aloud enhances concentration, aiding in overall text comprehension. Holland (2008) addresses the ongoing debate on the suitability of reading aloud to young learners, concluding that this practice is indeed valuable for their language development.

While research consistently emphasize the positive impact of reading aloud on language competence, a critical aspect often overlooked is the perspective of

the students themselves. Do students genuinely perceive reading aloud as beneficial for their language learning journey? Addressing these questions, this study delves into the unique insights and thoughts of students regarding the practice of reading aloud. By exploring the students' individual perspectives, this research aims to uncover their beliefs and attitudes towards reading aloud, providing valuable context to complement existing studies on its effects on language competence.

Methodology

This study was conducted at two Anatolian High Schools situated in Gemlik, Turkey. The majority of the students come from middle-income families, and their exposure to the second language (L2) is primarily limited to their English classes. The research focused on 9th and 12th-grade classes due to practical considerations. Primary and secondary schools, guided by the Ministry of National Education's English Language Teaching Program (MEB İngilizce Dersi Öğretim Programı, 2013), emphasize a communicative language teaching approach that prioritizes student-centered, game-based instruction. Therefore, the implementation of reading aloud activities in these school levels is not as feasible.

Additionally, the choice of 9th and 12th-grade classes aligns with the critical phase in L2 learning that students undergo during these periods. Conducting the study in these classes was deemed to yield more accurate insights into the students' perceptions of reading aloud. The research employed a mixed-method research design to ensure a comprehensive exploration of the topic.

Qualitative and quantitative data were collected to answer the following questions:

- 1- Are there any gender differences in terms of the perception of the students for reading aloud?
- 2- Is there any perception difference among 9th and 12th grades for reading aloud?
- 3- Is there a significant difference between schools in terms of the perception of the students for reading aloud?

Participants

Participants in this study were drawn from four classes across two Anatolian High Schools, encompassing students in both 9th and 12th grades. The selection criteria for the participants involved considering the TEOG (Transition from Secondary School to High School Examination) scores. For those entering 9th grade at A Anatolian High School, the lowest score was 412,389, while for 12th grade students, the lowest score was 380,703. Similarly, for those joining 9th

grade at B Anatolian High School, the lowest TEOG score was 313,099, and for 12th grade students, it was 280,220. The study comprised a total of 123 participants, with 66 (53.658%) females and 57 (46.342%) males. This diverse group of students from both grades and genders provided a comprehensive basis for examining the perceptions of reading aloud across different demographic segments.

Data Collection

The study employed a mixed-methods approach, combining both qualitative and quantitative data collection techniques to provide a comprehensive understanding of students' perceptions on reading aloud. Quantitative data were gathered through a structured questionnaire and subjected to statistical analysis using SPSS 22. In parallel, qualitative insights were obtained through semi-structured interviews. The selection of participants for interviews utilized systematic random sampling, ensuring a representative sample. A total of 6 participants from each grade willingly took part in the interviews, resulting in a balanced representation of 7 females and 5 males. The integration of both methods aimed to triangulate findings, enhancing the overall validity of the data by capturing a more nuanced and holistic understanding of students' perceptions on reading aloud.

Instruments

The study employed a perception questionnaire adapted from Korpriani (2014), who previously conducted research on reading-aloud strategies among students and teachers. Prior to administering the questionnaire, the purpose was transparently explained to the participants, emphasizing the evaluation of their perceptions on reading aloud. Instructions, including the indicators (never, rarely, sometimes, often, and always), were thoroughly elucidated, and participants were instructed to mark their responses with a thick (√) for clarity. The instrument comprised two parts: the first gathered demographic information, and the second presented 14 statements aimed at gauging students' perceptions of reading aloud. Participants were required to select the appropriate box (1: never, 2: rarely, 3: sometimes, 4: often, 5: always) to indicate their responses to each statement.

The content and face validity of the instrument were previously established in Korpriani's study (2014), and a pilot test with 13 12th-grade students from an Anatolian High School demonstrated high reliability with a 0.76 alpha value. Specifically, items 5 and 6 in the questionnaire focused on determining the purpose of students' reading aloud, while items 7 through 17 assessed the

perceived advantages of reading aloud. The 18th item inquired about students' preferences in reading aloud.

To enhance the validity of the questionnaire findings, interviews were conducted with 12 voluntarily selected participants. Each participant was presented with three open-ended questions to explore their perceptions of reading aloud. The interviews, lasting between 5 to 10 minutes, provided an additional layer of insight, and the researcher maintained detailed notes on the participants' viewpoints.

Data Analysis

The data analysis for this study unfolded in two distinct phases. Initially, the quantitative data were subjected to analysis using SPSS 22 software. In this phase, the software was employed to determine the reliability and mean scores. The outcomes of the Levene's test indicated a departure from normal distribution in the data. Consequently, non-parametric independent sample tests were deemed suitable for the analysis. The Mann-Whitney U test was applied to assess gender differences, while the Kruskal-Wallis test was utilized to examine potential differences based on grade and school. In the second phase, qualitative data obtained through semi-structured and single-session interviews underwent analysis via content analysis. This qualitative approach was chosen to provide a deeper understanding and interpretation of the participants' perspectives on reading aloud.

Results

The findings from Table 1 reveal insightful trends regarding students' perceptions of reading aloud. A significant proportion of students, around 52.8%, reported using reading aloud for pleasure, while over half of the participants (51.1%) indicated engaging in oral reading to enhance understanding and memorization during study sessions. The responses further highlight a consensus among students regarding the benefits of reading aloud, with notable percentages acknowledging its positive impact on memorization, pronunciation, intonation, and conversation practice. Additionally, a preference for reading aloud over silent reading is evident, with 52.9% expressing an inclination for oral reading. The mean scores, ranging from approximately 2.5 to 3.7, collectively suggest a moderate to high level of agreement with the statements, indicating an overall positive attitude towards the practice of reading aloud. In conclusion, the quantitative data emphasizes that a substantial number of students recognize reading aloud as a valuable tool for diverse aspects of language learning, reflecting a positive and favourable disposition toward this practice.

Table 1: Results of Frequency Analysis of the Questionnaire

	Items	Never	Rarely	Sometimes	Often	Always	Mean
5.	I use reading aloud only for pleasure	%20,3	%26,8	%37,4	%8,90	%6,50	2,54
6.	I read aloud while studying as it helps me understand and memorize the text.	%10,6	%13,8	%23,6	%31,7	%19,5	3,38
7.	It helps in memorizing and remembering words.	%8,10	%11,4	%30,9	%29,3	%20,3	3,42
8.	It helps me match the sound with the words.	%8,90	%20,3	%35,8	%22,8	%12,2	3,08
9.	It helps in pronunciation practice and pronouncing the words better.	%4,10	%5,70	%30,1	%27,6	%32,5	3,78
10.	It is very useful because the teacher can correct my pronunciation.	%4,10	%8,90	%26,8	%31,7	%28,5	3,71
11.	It helps me in practicing intonation.	%4,90	%16,3	%30,9	%22,0	%26,0	%3,47
12.	It helps in conversation and practice talking in a foreign language.	%8,10	%17,1	%24,4	%30,1	%20,3	%3,37
13.	It makes the words more familiar and helps	%3,30	%11,4	%34,1	%29,3	%22,0	%3,55

	memorizing them and using them in conversations with others.						
14.	It makes me concentrate more and understand the text.	%9,80	%16,3	%30,9	%22,0	%21,1	%3,28
15.	In reading aloud, it helps me understand more as I use three senses (sight, hearing, and speech).	%4,90	%12,2	%26,0	%30,9	%26,0	3,6098
16.	I read faster and understand more in reading aloud.	%13,8	%19,5	%30,9	%21,1	%14,6	%3,0325
17.	While the other student read the text aloud, I will listen and pay attention to him/her.	%26,0	%16,3	%28,5	%18,7	%10,6	%2,7154
18.	I prefer reading the text orally rather than read it silently.	%17,1	%17,1	%26,8	%13,0	%26,0	%3,1382

Reading aloud and gender

To address the primary research question investigating gender differences in students' perceptions of reading aloud, the Mann-Whitney U test was employed. The analysis revealed no significant differences in responses to the 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 11th, 12th, 15th, 17th, and 18th questionnaire items. Despite this, it is noteworthy that, on average, female participants tended to report higher mean scores than their male counterparts across these items. However, Table 2 indicates that three items on the scale demonstrated statistically significant differences in

gender perceptions of reading aloud. The Mann-Whitney U test results suggest that female students, more so than their male counterparts, believe that reading aloud enhances word familiarity, aids in memorization for use in conversations, and contributes to improved concentration and understanding of the text. In summary, while overall gender differences were not pronounced in most items, the data underscores specific areas where female students exhibit a more positive inclination toward the perceived benefits of reading aloud.

Table 2: *Gender differences in terms of the perception of the students for reading aloud.*

Items	Gender	N	Mean	Sig
5. I use reading aloud only for pleasure	Female	66	64,22	0,438
	Male	57	59,43	
6. I read aloud while studying as it helps me understand and memorize the text.	Female	66	64,76	0,342
	Male	57	58,81	
7. It helps in memorizing and remembering words.	Female	66	64,12	0,463
	Male	57	59,54	
8. It helps me match the sound with the words.	Female	66	64,24	0,437
	Male	57	59,40	
9. It helps in pronunciation practice and pronouncing the words better.	Female	66	62,20	0,945
	Male	57	61,77	
10. It is very useful because the teacher can correct my pronunciation.	Female	66	65,11	0,280
	Male	57	58,40	
11. It helps me in practicing intonation.	Female	66	59,80	0,446
	Male	57	64,55	
12. It helps in conversation and practice talking in a foreign language.	Female	66	65,94	0,175
	Male	57	57,44	
13. It makes the words more familiar and helps memorizing them and using them in conversations with others.	Female	66	68,59	0,022
	Male	57	54,37	
14. It makes me concentrate more and understand the text.	Female	66	68,64	0,022
	Male	57	54,32	
15.	Female	66	66,89	

	In reading aloud, it helps me understand more as I use three senses (sight, hearing, and speech).	Male	57	56,34	0,090
16.	I read faster and understand more in reading aloud.	Female	66	71,13	0,002
		Male	57	51,43	
17.	While the other student read the text aloud, I will listen and pay attention to him/her.	Female	66	63,64	0,572
		Male	57	60,10	
18.	I prefer reading the text orally rather than read it silently.	Female	66	65,86	0,185
		Male	57	57,53	

Reading aloud and grades

In order to answer second research question exploring potential perception differences between 9th and 12th-grade students regarding reading aloud, the Kruskal-Wallis test was employed. The analysis revealed no significant differences in responses to the 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th, 14th, 15th, and 16th questionnaire items. Intriguingly, despite the lack of statistical significance, it is noteworthy that 9th-grade students, on average, reported higher mean scores across these items compared to their 12th-grade counterparts. However, when examining responses to the 17th and 18th questions, significant differences were uncovered between the two grade levels. According to the Kruskal-Wallis test results, 9th-grade students exhibit a greater inclination to listen and pay attention to their peers while reading aloud, in contrast to 12th-grade students. Additionally, 9th-grade students express a stronger preference for reading the text orally compared to their counterparts in the 12th grade. In summary, while overall perception differences were not pronounced in most items, specific distinctions emerged when considering attention to peers and preference for oral reading between the two grade levels.

Table 3: *Grade differences in terms of the perception of the students for reading aloud.*

	Items	Grade	N	Mean	Sig
5.	I use reading aloud only for pleasure	9	53	65,70	0,296
		12	70	59,20	
6.	I read aloud while studying as it helps me understand and memorize the text.	9	53	58,14	0,282
		12	70	64,92	
7.	It helps in memorizing and remembering words.	9	53	58,94	0,392
		12	70	64,31	
8.	It helps me match the sound with the words.	9	53	64,98	0,403
		12	70	59,74	
9.	It helps in pronunciation practice and pronouncing the words better.	9	53	60,38	0,646
		12	70	63,23	
10.	It is very useful because the teacher can correct my pronunciation.	9	53	63,94	0,584
		12	70	60,53	
11.	It helps me in practicing intonation.	9	53	61,79	0,954
		12	70	62,16	
12.	It helps in conversation and practice talking in a foreign language.	9	53	64,46	0,493
		12	70	60,14	
13.	It makes the words more familiar and helps memorizing them and using them in conversations with others.	9	53	57,81	0,238
		12	70	65,17	
14.	It makes me concentrate more and understand the text.	9	53	66,45	0,215
		12	70	58,63	
15.	In reading aloud, it helps me understand more as I use three senses (sight, hearing, and speech).	9	53	68,10	0,087
		12	70	57,38	
16.	I read faster and understand more in reading aloud.	9	53	67,95	0,098
		12	70	57,49	
17.	While the other student read the text aloud, I will listen and pay attention to him/her.	9	53	72,22	0,004
		12	70	54,26	

18.	I prefer reading the text orally rather than read it silently.	9	53	70,67	0,016
		12	70	55,44	

Reading aloud and schools

To address the third research question, which investigates potential perception differences between two Anatolian High Schools regarding reading aloud, the Kruskal-Wallis test was employed. The analysis indicated no significant differences in responses to the 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th, 12th, 13th, 14th, 15th, 16th, and 17th questionnaire items. However, upon closer examination of the 17th question, a noteworthy distinction emerged between the responses of students from School A and School B. According to the Kruskal-Wallis test results, students in School A exhibited a greater tendency to listen and pay attention to their classmates while reading aloud compared to students in School B. While overall perceptions aligned closely, this specific difference suggests a variation in the emphasis placed on peer engagement during reading aloud activities between the two Anatolian High Schools.

	Items	School	N	Mean	Sig
5.	I use reading aloud only for pleasure	A	62	62,27	0,931
		B	61	61,73	
6.	I read aloud while studying as it helps me understand and memorize the text.	A	62	64,37	0,444
		B	61	59,59	
7.	It helps in memorizing and remembering words.	A	62	65,40	0,271
		B	61	58,55	
8.	It helps me match the sound with the words.	A	62	59,64	0,443
		B	61	64,40	
9.	It helps in pronunciation practice and pronouncing the words better.	A	62	67,77	0,59
		B	61	56,14	
10.	It is very useful because the teacher can correct my pronunciation.	A	62	66,84	0,115
		B	61	57,08	
11.	It helps me in practicing intonation.	A	62	62,79	0,798
		B	61	61,20	

12.	It helps in conversation and practice talking in a foreign language.	A	62	63,89	0,543
		B	61	60,08	
13.	It makes the words more familiar and helps memorizing them and using them in conversations with others.	A	62	65,74	0,222
		B	61	58,20	
14.	It makes me concentrate more and understand the text.	A	62	60,64	0,660
		B	61	63,39	
15.	In reading aloud, it helps me understand more as I use three senses (sight, hearing, and speech).	A	62	67,98	0,052
		B	61	55,93	
16.	I read faster and understand more in reading aloud.	A	62	60,44	0,614
		B	61	63,59	
17.	While the other student read the text aloud, I will listen and pay attention to him/her.	A	62	53,74	0,008
		B	61	70,39	
18.	I prefer reading the text orally rather than read it silently.	A	62	59,53	0,505
		B	61	64,11	

After conducting the tests, the researcher engaged in interviews with 12 voluntary participants from School B. These interviews were transcribed and analyzed. Conducted in the participants' native language (L1), the responses were subsequently translated from Turkish. The interview questions aimed to delve deeper into the participants' perspectives on reading aloud, complementing the quantitative data gathered through the questionnaire. The three questions posed were as follows:

Preferences for Reading Aloud:

Do you prefer reading aloud for pleasure? Do you prefer reading aloud as it facilitates your comprehension and memorization?

In response to the first question, seven participants indicated that they occasionally read aloud for pleasure, three rarely, and two never. For the second question, five participants mentioned that they often read aloud while studying, three always, two sometimes, and two rarely.

Advantages of Reading Aloud:

What do you think about the advantages of reading aloud? (e.g., memorizing and remembering words, matching sounds with words, pronunciation, intonation, conversation practice, concentration, and understanding)

Regarding the advantages of reading aloud, nine participants acknowledged its benefits in practicing pronunciation, intonation, concentration, and conversation. Three participants did not believe in the advantages of reading aloud. When considering frequency indicators (never, rarely, sometimes, often, always), four participants expressed that they often perceive the advantages of pronunciation, intonation, concentration, and conversation practice in reading aloud. Three participants mentioned sometimes, one rarely, one always, and three never.

Reading Preference:

Which do you prefer, reading aloud or silent reading?

Finally, participants were asked about their preference for reading aloud. Four participants stated that they always prefer reading aloud, four sometimes, two often, and two rarely. These interview results provided nuanced insights that complemented and enriched the findings from the questionnaire, offering a more comprehensive understanding of students' attitudes and practices related to reading aloud.

Discussion

The aim of this study was to explore high school students' perceptions of reading aloud, examining the data based on gender, grades, and school. Analysis of the responses from the perception questionnaire revealed that the majority of the students engage in reading aloud for pleasure, and they believe that this practice aids in their comprehension and memorization of the text. These findings align with the results of a study conducted by Alshumaimeri (2011). Overall, the students in this study exhibit a positive perception of reading aloud. However, a noteworthy observation arises when considering the 17th item, indicating that a significant number of students do not actively listen and pay attention to their peers when reading aloud. This outcome is particularly striking given that all participants attend prestigious Anatolian High Schools that admit students with high academic scores. The divergence in behavior on this aspect may shed light on specific challenges within the school environment and, on a broader scale, reflect societal issues. This finding prompts further exploration into the dynamics influencing peer engagement during reading aloud activities in educational setting.

In the analysis of the relationship between perception and gender, it was observed that a majority of female participants believe that reading aloud enhances word familiarity, aids in memorization for use in conversations, and contributes to improved concentration and understanding of the text.

Furthermore, compared to their male counterparts, female participants express a belief that reading aloud enables them to read faster and understand more.

Turning to the examination of the relationship between perception and grades, a noteworthy finding emerged: participants in the 9th grade demonstrated a greater inclination to listen and pay attention to their peers while reading aloud compared to those in the 12th grade. This significant difference may be attributed to the newness of 9th-grade students to the school environment, where they may be more attuned to teacher and peer interactions, possibly driven by a greater inclination to adhere to classroom and school rules. Another contributing factor could be the heightened focus of 12th-grade students on upcoming examinations such as the YGS (Transition to Higher Education Examination) and LYS (Undergraduate Placement Examination). Their intense concentration on exam preparation may limit their attention to classmates reading aloud. Additionally, an interesting discovery was made concerning the 18th item: 9th-grade students demonstrated a stronger preference for reading aloud compared to their 12th-grade counterparts. This aligns with Crockton's (2010) findings, which suggest that young individuals are more inclined to read aloud than adults, providing a potential explanation for the significant difference observed between the two grade levels.

In exploring the relationship between perception and grades, a notable finding surfaced: participants from School B scored higher in the 17th item compared to their counterparts from School A. This significant difference indicates that students in School B tend to listen and pay more attention to their peers while engaging in reading aloud activities. Interestingly, when comparing the schools' success in the YGS and LYS examinations, School A demonstrates greater success than School B. This suggests that the academic success of a school may not necessarily correlate with students' propensity to listen and pay attention to their peers during reading aloud. Various other factors, such as classroom rules, teacher influence, and students' backgrounds, may contribute to this significant difference.

Beyond the questionnaire, interviews were conducted to delve into participants' personal perceptions of reading aloud. The interviews revealed that students generally hold positive attitudes toward reading aloud. While most participants acknowledge the advantages of reading aloud, some expressed no intention to engage in this practice. Moreover, a majority of participants exhibited a preference for reading aloud. These findings align with existing literature (Holland, 2008; Alshumaimeri, 2011; Huang, 2010), emphasizing the positive impact of reading aloud on language learning and development.

Conclusion

In conclusion, this study aimed to examine high school students' perceptions of reading aloud, considering gender, grades, and school variations. The overall findings indicate that a majority of students express a preference for reading aloud, recognizing its associated benefits. Students believe that reading aloud enhances memorization, aids in understanding words for conversational use, and contributes to improved pronunciation, with the added benefit of teacher correction. Moreover, students perceive positive effects on intonation, concentration, and text comprehension through reading aloud. While some students may not agree, a significant number actively listen and pay attention when their peers read aloud, fostering a communal learning atmosphere.

Notably, gender, grade, and school differences emerged in the analysis. Female students, 9th-grade students, and students from School B exhibited distinct patterns in their perceptions of reading aloud. Females were more likely to attribute increased word familiarity, better memorization, enhanced concentration, and faster reading to reading aloud. 9th-grade students demonstrated a greater inclination to listen and pay attention to their peers during reading aloud sessions, and School B students exhibited a higher propensity for attentive listening compared to School A.

However, it is crucial to acknowledge the limitations of this study, notably the constrained sample size, which encompassed only four classrooms in Anatolian High School's 9th and 12th grades. Generalizing these findings should be approached with caution. Future research endeavors should expand the sample population to include a more diverse representation of classrooms and schools. Additionally, further investigation is warranted to assess students' actual performance concerning their perceptions of reading aloud. By addressing these considerations, future studies can contribute to a more comprehensive understanding of the dynamics surrounding students' attitudes and practices related to reading aloud.

References

- Alshumaimeri, Y. (2011). The Effects of Reading Method on the Comprehension Performance of Saudi EFL Students. *International Electric Journal of Elementary Education* 4(1): 185-195.
- Batini, F., D'Autilia, B., Pera, E., Lucchetti, L., & Toti, G. (2020). Reading aloud and first language development: a systematic review. *Journal of Education and Training Studies*, 8(12), 49-68.
- Billington, E. J., Skinner, C. H., & Cruchon, N. M. (2004). Improving sixth-grade students perceptions of high-effort assignments by assigning more work: Interaction of additive interspersal and assignment effort on assignment choice. *Journal of School Psychology*, 42. 477-490.
- Casteel, C. (1989). Motivating reluctant readers to become mature readers. *Reading Improvement*, 25. 98-101
- Crockton, L. (2010). The Benefits of Reading Aloud to Children in Grades 5 and 6. *Education Masters*. Paper 49.
- Danesi, M. (2000). *Semiotics in Language Education*. New York: Mouton de Gruyter,
- Englishclub (2016). www.englishclub.com/reading/what.htm.
- Fancher, J.M. (2007). How is Comprehension Affected When Reading Aloud Versus Reading Silently? *Education and Human Development Master's Theses*. Paper 276.
- Frick, H.A. (1986). The value of sharing stories orally with middle grade students. *Journal of Reading*, 22, 300-303.
- Grabe, W. (1991). Current developments in second language reading research. *TESOL Quarterly* 25/3: 375-406
- Grant, W. A. (1994). Perceptions of reading aloud in intermediate and secondary classrooms (Doctoral dissertation, University of British Columbia)
- Gibson, S. (2008). Reading aloud: a useful learning tool? *ELT Journal*, 62. 29-36.

- Holland, J. W. (2008). Reading Aloud with Infants: The Controversy, the Myth, and Case Study. *Early Childhood Education Journal*, 35. 383-385.
- Huang, L. (2010). Reading Aloud in the Foreign Language Teaching. *Asian Social Science*. 148.150
- Jacobs, J. S., Morrison, T. G., & Swinyard, W. R. (2000). Reading Aloud to students: A National Probability Study of Classroom Reading Practices of Elementary School Teacher. *Reading Psychology*. 171-193.
- Johns, J.L. (1978). Motivating Reluctant Readers. *Journal of Research and Development in Education*, 11. 69-73.
- Kragler, S. (1995). The transition from oral to silent reading. *Reading Psychology. An International Quarterly*, 6. 395-408.
- Krashen, S. D.(1982) Principles and Practice in Second Language Acquisition, University of Southern California. Pergamon Press Inc.
- MEB, İngilizce Dersi (2,3,4,5,6,7 ve 8.sınıflar) Öğretim Programı(2013).
<http://ttkb.meb.gov.tr/program2.aspx?islem=1&kno=214>
- McCormick, S. (1977). Should you read aloud to your children? *LanguageAtia*, 54. 139-143, 163.
- Morrow, L.M., & Smith, J. (1990). The effects of group size on interactive storybook reading. *Reading Research Quarterly*, 25. 213-231.
- Nambi, R. (2019). Secondary School Students' Experiences with Reading Aloud in Uganda: A Case Study. *Journal of Language Teaching and Research*, 10(2), 224-231.
- Pankey, J.C. (2000) The Benefits of Reading aloud to Pre-School Children. Biola University, La Mirada, California
- Paran, A. (1996). Reading in EFL: Facts and Fictions. *English Language Teaching Journal*, 50/1, (pp 25 34).
- Swalm, J.E. (1972). A comparison of oral reading, silent reading and listening comprehension. *Education*, 92. 111-115.
- Wood, M., & Salvetti, E. (2001). Project Story Boost: Read-alouds for students at risk. *The Reading*

Teacher, 55(1), 76-83.

CHAPTER 11

RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN WORK VALUES INNOVATIVE WORK BEHAVIOR AND JOB PERFORMANCE

MUHAMMED YUSUF GÖKÇEN¹

SABAHATTİN ÇETİN²

INTRODUCTION

The reasons that enable the individual to draw a path for himself/herself with the information he/she has acquired throughout his/her life, regulate his/her relations with his/her family, friends in his/her social life, other people in his/her life and cause the formation of his/her behaviors in his/her daily life are formed by the value system he/she has learned or taught to him/her. When the individual reflects and applies this value system to his/her work life, he/she starts to reveal his/her work values. The colleagues of the individual in the organization evaluate and communicate with the individual according to these values. Managers, on the other hand, have many reasons for the employee to rise in his/her position or to stay in his/her current position, and the individual's work values are among the pioneers of these reasons. For this reason, they examine the work values exhibited by the individual in the organization as a criterion to create the idea that the behaviors of the individual are "good or bad", or "right or wrong" (Sığrı, 2007:4).

The fact that individuals make progressive notifications to the organization about their fields of duty will take the organization one step ahead of its competitors (Demirer, 2020:170). At this point, individuals need to come up with new ideas and products. Innovative work behavior refers to the activities that will benefit the organization or the employee himself/herself regarding the activities within the employee's duties and responsibilities. Whether for the organization or oneself, the individual is expected to be innovative within the organization and to show this innovativeness.

¹ muhammedyusuf_93@hotmail.com ORCID No: 0000-0003-2275-3495
Assoc. Prof. Dr.; Bartın University Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of International Trade and Logistics. scetin@bartin.edu.tr ORCID No: <https://orcid.org/0000-0001-9686-1806>

* This study is based on the first author's master's thesis.

Although technological developments increase their importance for organizations day by day, the human factor always maintains its importance (Akdemir et al., 2016:118). Those who develop technology also consist of people. For an individual to continue his/her working life in an organization, he/she needs to achieve certain outputs (Karakaş & Aslan, 2023:148). These outputs are also important for the organization to maintain its continuity. Job performance is a concept related to the performance of the individual while achieving these outputs. The individual needs to increase his/her job performance both to increase his/her position in the organization he/she works for and for the organization to develop. In this way, the success or failure of the employees of the organization becomes measurable (Soysal et al., 2019:76).

In this study, work values, innovative work behavior, and work performance, which are important for organizations, are discussed together. After giving explanations about the concepts in the study, the results of the field research conducted are given.

1. LITERATURE SUMMARY

1.1 Work Values

Work values are used as a tool to provide information about the culture and thought systems of employees by looking at the values they carry while exhibiting behavior at work. The fact that there are many cultures in the world and that each society has its way of life, value system, and behavioral patterns also affects employees. While this situation enables the social generalization of work values, it makes it difficult to generalize them universally. By examining the values that the employee has at work and reflected in his/her behaviors, it can be revealed whether the behavior he/she exhibits has a cause-and-effect relationship with society and whether it benefits him/her in business life (Yücel & Karataş, 2009:74).

Work values are a process that changes by being affected by sociological changes, economic fluctuations, and differences in the history of societies. A person's work values consist of the values brought by his/her personality. However, work values change over time and a person can add new ones to the values he/she carries or reduce them. Thus, it is explained that work values can be gained or abandoned with new teachings over time (Kubat, 2007:13).

Work values refer to the behaviors that the employee thinks are important in his/her working life, the behaviors that he/she considers necessary, the behaviors that he/she should exhibit to advance in his/her career, and the behaviors required for the work environment to be more efficient. For the organization, work values are used to control the work of the employee,

whether his/her behaviors are in line with the goals and objectives of the organization, and whether he/she does extra work for the organization to compete more along with his/her normal work. There are organizational values as well as personal values. These values enable organizations to differentiate from each other and to show superiority to each other in a competitive environment (Erdem, 2003:55-56).

1.2 Innovative Work Behavior

Innovative work behavior refers to the voluntary initiation of new and useful ways of doing things within a role, a group, or an organization (West & Far, 1990; cited in Lecat, Beusaert, & Raemdonck, 2018: 531). Scott and Bruce (1994: 581-582) state that innovative work behavior is a process that includes the stages of identifying problems, generating ideas or solutions, providing support for the solution, and finally presenting the prototype of the idea or solution. In another definition, innovative work behavior is defined as discovering, putting forward, and implementing ideas that will benefit the organization (Janssen, 2000: 288). To demonstrate innovative work behavior, each stage of the innovation activity that the employee wants to do should be determined and analyzed (Carmeli et al. 2006:78). The innovation to be introduced can occur in different ways within the organization. Innovation can include activities such as the development of new product ideas or technologies, changes in administrative procedures, or the implementation of new ideas or technologies to increase efficiency (Kleysen and Street, 2001: 285). It is important that such a process, which may lead to comprehensive change, is carried out consciously and in a planned manner.

1.3 Job Performance

Job performance constitutes the behaviors of the situations related to the goals of the organization that are under the control of the employee, behaviors that can be analyzed and controlled (Diaz-Vilela et al., 2015; 2). In another definition, it is explained as "all kinds of activities and behaviors that are under the control of the employee and provide benefits to achieve the goals of the organization" (Özkan, 2017:60). Job performance is subjective for individuals as well as sectors. Since each individual has different values, thoughts, and skills than his/her colleague, the difference in performance between them will be different in proportion to these criteria (Orçanlı et al., 2019:78-80).

Job performance shows the efforts of the employee to achieve the goals of the organization individually, as a group, or as a whole (Akova & Aslan, 2018:261). Organizations that want to improve themselves, try to increase their

turnover by using job performance as an important organizational dynamic by revealing the difference in product, service, or management among other organizations in a competitive environment. Learning organizations, that is, organizations that have adopted the principle of self-improvement, contribute to the development of their employees by providing their employees with in-service training and ease of access to the latest technological innovations related to products and services (Dahkoul, 2018:12).

Job performance enables the employees in the organization to determine what they do, how successful they are in their work, how much they comply with the standards established within the organization and to obtain information about them. In line with this information, it becomes easier for the organization to get to know its employees and approaches can be developed accordingly. In this direction, the organization will strengthen the employee's bond with the organization by directing the employee according to its mission and vision and will ensure that the employee performs more selflessly by thinking that he/she is important to the organization (Helvacı, 2002:159). Job performance not only increases the success of individuals and differentiates them from other employees, but also differentiates organizations from other organizations and gives them a more prestigious identity. In addition, this prestige will also provide a competitive advantage. Organizations, by evaluating the job performance of employees, provide their employees with the tasks and responsibilities they can take on in the future, show them the skills they find skillful and show them to work more on these skills, and make them feel that they are valuable to the organization by combining their performance with the goals and objectives of the organization, and accelerate the consolidation of organizational management (Yılmaz & Turan, 2019: 326-327).

2. METHOD

2.1. Purpose of the Study

The purpose of this study is to examine the relationship between work values, innovative work behavior, and job performance. The hypotheses and research model developed within the scope of the research are given below.

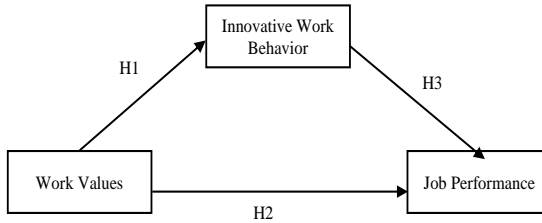


Figure 1: Research Model

H1: Work values affect innovative work behavior.

H2: Work values affect job performance

H3: Innovative work behavior affects job performance.

2.2. Population and Sample of the Study

The survey method was applied in the study. The population of the research consists of all public and private sector employees in Bartın province without discrimination in the positions of employees. The sample of the research consists of 560 people selected randomly. After examining the consistency of the data collected from the questionnaire application, such as the consistency of the data collected, incomplete information, and removal of suspicious data, the remaining number of questionnaires is 538.

2.3. Scales of the Study

For the work values scale, the scale used by Eşitti (2016) in his study was utilized. The scale was created using a 5-point Likert scale as 1: Not at all important, 2: Not very important, 3: Somewhat important, 4: Important, and 5: Very important.

The scale questions related to innovative work behavior were taken from Kör (2015)'s study. In the scale, a 5-point Likert method is applied and it is 1: Never, 2: Very Rarely, 3: Occasionally, 4: Usually, 5: Always.

The scale used for job performance was taken from Şehitoğlu's (2010) study. Using a 5-point Likert scale, 1: Strongly Disagree, 2: Disagree, 3: Undecided, 4: Agree, 5: Strongly Agree.

2.4. Results

Analysis of the Demographic Characteristics of the Participants

Analysis of the Demographic Characteristics of the Participants

When the demographic characteristics of the 538 participants were analyzed, it was found that 35.1% of the participants were women and 64.9% were men. When the age status was analyzed, it was seen that 27.7% were 22-29 years old, 36.6% were 30-39 years old, 22.9% were 40-49 years old, and 12.8% were 50 years and over. When the educational status of the participants was examined, it was seen that 6.3% were primary school graduates, 21.9% were secondary school graduates, 27.5% were associate degree graduates, 40.3% were bachelor's degree graduates, and 3.9% were master's degree graduates. When the sector-based analysis of the organizations in which 538 people participated in the research work was made, it was seen that 61.3% of the participants worked in the public sector and 38.7% in the private sector. When their positions in their workplaces were analyzed, it was seen that 90.0% of them were employees and 9.1% were managers. It is seen that 28.4% of the participants have gained professional experience by working for 1-5 years, 23.8% for 6-10 years, 19% for 11-15 years, 10.4% for 16-20 years and 18.4% for 21 years or more.

Table 1: Demographic Features

		n	%
Gender	Male	189	35,1
	Woman	349	64,9
Age	22-29	149	27,7
	30-39	197	36,6
	40-49	123	22,9
	50 and above	69	12,8
	Primary education	34	6,4
Education Level	High school	118	21,9
	Associate Degree	148	27,5
	Bachelor's degree	217	40,3
	Postgraduate	21	3,9
	Public sector	330	61,3
Sector of the Organization	Private sector	208	38,7
Working Position	Employee	489	90,9
	Administrator	49	9,1
Professional Experience	1-5 years	153	28,4
	6-10 years	128	23,8
	11-15 years	102	19,0
	16-20 years	56	10,4
	21 years and above	99	18,4

Confirmatory Factor Analysis

It is important to establish the research model correctly and in the specified suitability. Confirmatory factor analysis is also included in these tests. Confirmatory factor analysis is used to show the degree of appropriateness of the relationship between the factors put forward to establish the research hypotheses, how much one variable is related to another variable, and whether the hypotheses are sufficient to explain the research model (Erkorkmaz et al., 2013:211).

Table 2: Confirmatory Factor Analysis Results

Factors	χ^2/df	GFI	AGFI	CFI	RMSEA	NFI	TLI	IFI
Work Values	3,315	,912	,883	,901	,066	,866	,882	,902
Innovative Work Behavior	2,677	,943	,918	,967	,056	,949	,959	,968
Job Performance	2,553	,988	,967	,984	,054	,975	,970	,984

According to the confirmatory factor analysis results of work values, innovative work behavior, and performance variables given in Table 2, the χ^2/df value of the work values scale was found to be 3.315, the χ^2/df value of the

innovative work behavior scale was found to be 2.677 and the χ^2/df value of the work performance was found to be 2.553. The fact that this value is less than 5 indicates a good fit. The GFI value of innovative work behavior was 0.943 the AGFI value was 0.918, the GFI value of work values was 0.912, the AGFI value was 0.883, the GFI value of work performance was 0.988 and the AGFI value was 0.967. GFI and AGFI values are evaluated between 0 and 1. According to the result of the analysis, a value close to 1 indicates a perfect fit. A GFI value greater than 0.95 indicates a perfect fit, and values between 0.90 and 0.95 indicate that there is a good fit. A GFI value greater than 0.95 indicates an excellent fit, a value between 0.90 and 0.95 indicates a good fit and a value between 0.85 and 0.90 indicates an acceptable fit. GFI and AGFI values of innovative work behavior, work values, and performance variables were found to be in harmony (Erkorkmaz et al., 2013:213).

The CFI value of innovative work behavior was 0.967, the CFI value of work values was 0.901, and the CFI value of work performance was 0.984. The CFI values of innovative work behavior and performance are greater than 0.95, indicating a good fit. The CFI value of business values being greater than 0.90 indicates an acceptable fit. The RMSEA value of innovative work behavior is 0.056, the RMSEA value of work values is 0.066, RMSEA value of performance is 0.054. All of these values are between 0.05 and 0.08, indicating an acceptable fit. According to the result, all RMSEA values show an acceptable fit. The IFI value of innovative work behavior is 0.968, the IFI value of work values is 0.902, and the IFI value of performance is 0.984. These values between 0.90 and 0.95 indicate acceptable fit and values above 0.95 indicate perfect fit. While the IFI value shows an acceptable fit according to the results of business values, the IFI value shows an excellent fit according to the results of innovative business behavior and performance (Yaralı, 2015:17).

The NFI value of innovative work behavior is 0.949 the TLI value is 0.959, the NFI value of work values is 0.866 and TLI value is 0.882, the NFI value of performance is 0.975 and the TLI value is 0.970. Although the values vary between 0 and 1, values above 0.90 indicate an acceptable fit. As a result of the analysis, it was seen that the NFI and TLI values of innovative business behavior and performance showed an acceptable fit, while the NFI and TLI values of business values were not in harmony (Karagöz, 2016:969).

Reliability and Validity Analysis

The number of statements, factor loading ranges and (α) values for the factors are given in Table 3. Four statements in the work values scale, one statement in the innovative work behavior scale, and one statement in the work

performance scale were excluded from the analysis because their factor loadings were less than 0.30. The factor loadings of work values are between 0.551-0.815, innovative work behavior between 0.602-0.858, and work performance between 0.422-0.756. The (α) value of work values is 0.891, innovative work behavior is 0.934 and work performance is 0.781. According to the (α) values of the scales, it is seen that the scales are reliable (Karagöz, 2016:941).

Table 3: Factor Loadings and (α) Values

Factors	Number of Statements	Factor Loadings	(α) Values
Work Values	20	0,551-0,815	0,891
Innovative Work Behavior	16	0,602-0,858	0,934
Job Performance	6	0,422-0,756	0,781

Correlation Analysis

Correlation analysis determines the direction and amount of the link between two variables. This value is expected to be between -1 and +1 (Can, 2016;369). When the results of the correlation analysis (Table 4) are analyzed, it is seen that there is a positive and significant relationship between the variables according to the significance levels ($p<.01$). According to the results of the correlation analysis, there is a positive and significant relationship between work values and innovative work behavior ($r=0.384$; $p<0.01$) and work performance ($r=0.239$; $p<0.01$). There is also a significant positive relationship between innovative work behavior and work performance ($r=0,469$; $p<0,01$).

Table 4: Correlation Analysis Results

	Mean	Std. Deviation	Work Values	Innovative Work Behavior	Job Performance
Work Values	4,26	,48	1		
Innovative Work Behavior	4,07	,58	,384**		
Job Performance	4,32	,49	,239**	,469**	1
* $p<.05$, ** $p<.01$					

Regression Analysis

Within the scope of the research, regression analysis was applied to investigate the interactions between work values, innovative work behavior, and work performance. In addition, the Durbin-Watson test was used for autocorrelation analysis. The Durbin-Watson analysis result value is expected to be between 0 and 4. While the result is expected to be close to zero to get an extremely positive correlation value, a result close to four indicates an extremely negative value. The Durbin-Watson value resulting from the analysis is expected to be between 1.5 and 2.5 (Kalaycı, 2010: 264).

Table 6: The Effect of Work Values on Innovative Work Behavior

Factor	Std. Hata	Beta	t	p
Work Values	,048	,384	9,627	,000
R2:,.146, F:92,674 ***, Durbin-Watson Değeri: 1,825 Dependent Variable: Innovative Work Behavior, (*p<0,05; ***p<0,001)				

According to the results of the regression analysis conducted to measure the effect of work values on innovative work behavior (Table 6), the model is significant and explanatory (F:92,672***, p<0,001). As a result of the analysis for autocorrelation, the Durbin-Watson value is 1.825. As a result of this value, it is revealed that there is no autocorrelation between the variables. As a result of the regression analysis, it was determined that work values significantly affect innovative work behavior (p:0,000; Beta:0,384). The H1 hypothesis is accepted.

Table 7: The Effect of Work Values on Work Performance

Factor	Std. Hata	Beta	t	p
Work Values	,043	,232	5,516	,000
R2:,.052, F:30,428 ***, Durbin-Watson Değeri: 1,807 Dependent Variable: Job Performance, (*p<0,05; ***p<0,001)				

According to the results of the regression analysis conducted to measure the effect of work values on job performance given in Table 7, it is seen that the model created is significant and explanatory (F:30,428***, p<0,001). As a result of the analysis for autocorrelation, the Durbin-Watson value was 1.807. As a result of this value, it is revealed that there is no autocorrelation between the variables. According to the results of the analysis on the effect of work values on job performance, it was determined that work values positively and statistically significantly affect job performance (p:0,000; Beta:0,232). As a result of the analysis, the H2 hypothesis was supported.

Table 8: The Effect of Innovative Work Behavior on Job Performance

Factor	Std. Hata	Beta	t	p
Innovative Work Behavior	,032	,474	12,468	,000
R2:,.223, F:155,447 ***, Durbin-Watson Değeri: 1,756 Dependent Variable: Job Performance, (*p<0,05; ***p<0,001)				

Table 8 presents the results of the regression analysis conducted to measure the effect of innovative work behavior on job performance. According to the results of the analysis, the model is significant and explanatory (F:155,447***,p<0,001). As a result of the analysis for autocorrelation, the Durbin-Watson value was 1.756. Since the result of the value is between 1.5 and 2.5, it is revealed that there is no autocorrelation between the variables. According to the results of the analysis, innovative work behavior has a significant effect on job performance (p:0.000; Beta:0.474). Hypothesis H3 is accepted. The resulting model of the research is given in Figure 2.

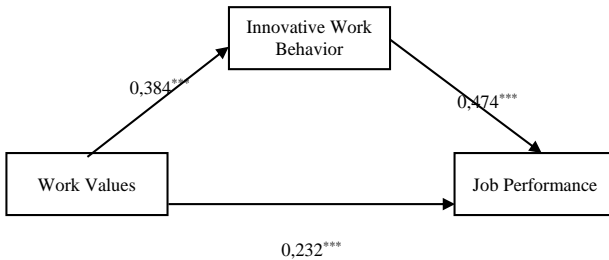


Figure 2: Result Model

CONCLUSION AND DISCUSSION

The study aims to investigate the effect of work values created by employees on innovative work behavior and work performance. In this framework, the effect of the independent variable, work values, on the dependent variable, innovative work behavior, and work performance was examined. The data were obtained by applying the questionnaire method to 538 people living in Bartın province, operating in the public and private sectors, and working in employee or managerial positions.

As a result of the analysis, it was determined that work values positively and statistically significantly affect innovative work behavior (p:0,000; Beta:0,384) and work performance (p:0,000; Beta:0,232). Finally, when the effect of innovative work behavior on job performance is examined, it is determined that

innovative work behavior has a significant positive effect on job performance ($p:0,000$; $\text{Beta}:0,474$). All three hypotheses developed within the scope of the research were accepted.

Work values, norms, and beliefs can significantly influence individual and group behaviors by supporting or inhibiting creativity and innovation (Martins & Terblanche, 2003). It is suggested that work values influence employees' behaviors and determine their performance and can have significant effects on employees' creative behaviors and performance (Ren et al., 2020).

The impact of work values on job performance has been extensively studied. Feather and Rauter (2004) found that work values significantly affect job performance (Feather & Rauter, 2004). Similarly, Miao et al. (2022) and Chen and Zhang (2021) point to the positive effect of work values on job performance. The research findings support the studies in the literature.

Previous studies have shown that innovative work behavior has a significant impact on business performance. Firdaus and Sakinah (2023) emphasized that innovative work behavior is fundamental for developing excellence, which in turn positively affects business performance (Firdaus and Sakinah, 2023). Furthermore, Pasek et al. (2022) showed the positive effects of green human resource management and green innovative work behavior on business model innovation and further influenced business performance (Pasek et al., 2022). In addition, Abdullah (2021) and Rahmawati & Permana (2020) identified the positive impact of innovative behavior on business performance (Abdullah, 2021; Rahmawati & Permana, 2020). Research findings support previous studies. These findings collectively support the idea that innovative work behavior can contribute to increased job performance.

As a result of the research, it was seen that employees' work values are related to innovative work behavior. With the training to be prepared by the human resources department of the organizations, employees' work values can be brought closer to the values of the organization. Thus, it is thought that employees can show more innovative work behaviors for the organizations they find themselves closer to.

With the strengthening and progress of the organization, it is a normal situation that employees within the organization will differentiate and their values will change. As a result of this situation, creating an area where employees can spend social time, providing opportunities for units to get to know each other and work in harmony can increase both innovative work behaviors and job performance of employees.

In this study, two factors are considered in explaining job performance. This is the most important limitation of the study. Job performance is affected by

various factors such as personal characteristics, psychological factors, and job-related factors. Therefore, further studies will contribute to this field.

REFERENCES

- Abdullah, A. (2021). Intellectual capital, female manager innovative behavior and catering business performance. *Jurnal Manajemen*, 25(1), 39. <https://doi.org/10.24912/jm.v25i1.702>
- Akdemir, B., Kırmızıgül, B., Zengin, Y. (2016). Örgütsel Sinizm İle İş Performansı Arasındaki İlişki ve Bir Araştırma. *Kahramanmaraş Sütçü İmam Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi*, 6(2): 115-130.
- Akova, O., & Aslan, A. (2018). Liderlik davranışı ile örgütsel seslilik ve çalışan performansı ilişkisi: otel çalışanları üzerine bir araştırma. *Sosyal Bilimlerde Akademik Çalışmalar, Gece Kitaplığı, Ankara*.
- Can, A. (2016). SPSS ile Bilimsel Araştırma Sürecinde Nicel Veri Analizi, Pegem Akademi, 4. Baskı
- Carmeli, A., Meitar, R. & Weisberg, J. (2006). Self-leadership skills and innovative behavior at work. *International Journal of Manpower*, Vol. 27, No. 1: PP: 75-90.
- Chen, J. and Zhang, Q. (2021). Work values and work performance of post-90s it employees: the mediating effect of organizational citizenship behavior. *E3s Web of Conferences*, 253, 02026. <https://doi.org/10.1051/e3sconf/202125302026>
- Dahkoul, Z. M. (2018). The Determinanta of Employee Performance in Jordamian Organizations. *Journal of Economics, Finance and Accounting*. V.5, No.1: P:11- 17
- Demirer, M. C. (2020). Yapısal ve Psikolojik Güçlendirmenin Kariyer Tatmini ve Yenilikçi İş Davranışı Üzerine Etkisi. *Eskişehir Osmangazi Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi*, Nisan, C. 15, S. 1: 165 – 184.
- Diaz-Vilela, L. F. ve Rodriguez, N. D. ve Isla-Diaz, R. ve Diaz-Cabrera, D. ve HernandezFernaud, E. ve Rosales-Sanchez, C. (2015). Relationships Between Contextual and Task Performance and Interrater Agreement: Arethereany?. *Plos One*, 10(10): 1-13
- Erdem, A. R. (2003). Üniversite Kültüründe Önemli Bir Unsur: Değerler, *Değerler Eğitimi Dergisi*, Cilt 1, No 4: 55 - 72,
- Erkorkmaz, Ü. ve Etikan, İ. ve Demir, O. ve Özdamar, K. ve Sanisoğlu, S.Y. (2013). Doğrulayıcı Faktör Analizi ve Uyum İndeksleri. *Türkiye Klinikleri Journal of Medical Sciences*, Sayı:33(1): 210-223
- Eşitti, B. (2016). İş Değerlerinin İş-Aile-İş Çatışması, İş Tatmini ve İşten Ayrılma Niyetine Etkileri: konaklama işletmelerinde bir araştırma. *Doktora Tezi (yayımlanmamış)*, Çanakkale Onsekiz Mart Üniversitesi

Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, İstanbul.

- Feather, N. and Rauter, K. (2004). Organizational citizenship behaviours in relation to job status, job insecurity, organizational commitment and identification, job satisfaction and work values. *Journal of Occupational and Organizational Psychology*, 77(1), 81-94.
- Firdaus, A. and Sakinah, S. (2023). Relationship between innovative work behavior, competitive advantage and business performance. *J-Mas (Jurnal Manajemen Dan Sains)*, 7(2), 1386. <https://doi.org/10.33087/jmas.v7i2.982>
- Helvacı, M. A. (2002). Performans Yönetimi Sürecinde Performans Değerlendirmenin Önemi. *Ankara Üniversitesi Eğitim Bilimleri Fakültesi Dergisi*, Cilt:36, Sayı:1-2: 155-169
- Janssen, O. (2000). Job demands, perceptions of effort-reward fairness and innovative work behaviour. *Journal of Occupational and Organizational Psychology*, 73(3), 287–302. doi:10.1348/096317900167038.
- Kalaycı, Ş. (2010). SPSS uygulamalı çok değişkenli istatistik teknikleri (Vol. 5). Ankara, Turkey: Asil Yayın Dağıtım.
- Karagöz, Y. (2016). Spss 23 ve Amos 23 Uygulamalı İstatistiksel Analizler, Nobel Yayınları Ankara
- Karakaş, A., & Aslan, A. (2023). İşgörenlerin İş Stresi ve İşkoliklik Davranışlarının İncelenmesi. *Turizmde Güncel Gelişmeler*. Eğitim Yayınevi.
- Kleysen, R. F. & Street, C. T. (2001). Toward a multi-dimensional measure of individual innovative behavior. *Journal of Intellectual Capital*, 2(3), 284–296. doi:10.1108/EUM0000000005660.
- Kör, B. (2015), Öz Liderlik, Örgütlerin girişimcilik yönelimi ve çalışanların yenilikçi iş davranışları arasındaki ilişkinin incelenmesi: Bir araştırma, Doktora Tezi (yayımlanmamış), İstanbul Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, İstanbul.
- Kubat, U. (2007). İmalat Sektöründe İş Değerleri İle Kişilik Özellikleri Arasındaki İlişkinin İncelenmesi. Yüksek Lisans Tezi (yayımlanmamış), Akdeniz Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Antalya
- Lecat, A., Beusaert, S. & Raemdonck, I. (2018). On the relation between teachers' (in)formal learning and innovative working behavior: the mediating role of employability. *Vocations and Learning*, 11(3), 529–554. doi:10.1007/s12186-018-9199-x.
- Martins, E. and Terblanche, F. (2003). Building organisational culture that stimulates creativity and innovation. *European Journal of Innovation Management*, 6(1), 64-74. <https://doi.org/10.1108/14601060310456337>

- Miao, B., Suo, Y., Liang, Y., & Li, Y. (2022). The Influence of Organizational Identity on Knowledge Employees' Job Performance—The Mediating Role of Work Values. *Ieee Access*, 10, 90903-90914. <https://doi.org/10.1109/access.2022.3201905>
- Pasek, I., Lina, N., Sumetri, N., Siwantara, I., & Sukarta, I. (2022). Promoting green human resources management to business model innovation in smes., 282-287. https://doi.org/10.2991/978-2-494069-83-1_51
- Rahmawati, I. and Permana, J. (2020). Improving teachers teaching performances through development of capacity buildings and innovative work behaviors.. <https://doi.org/10.2991/assehr.k.200130.146>
- Ren, H., Qing-lei, Z., & Zheng, Y. (2020). Impact of work values and knowledge sharing on creative performance. *Chinese Management Studies*, 15(1), 86-98. <https://doi.org/10.1108/cms-08-2019-0287>
- Orçanlı, K. ve Bekmezci, M. ve Fırat, Z. M. (2019). İş Güvencesizliğinin İş Performansına Etkisinde Örgütsel Kimliğin Aracılık Etkisi. *Uluslararası Toplum Araştırmaları Dergisi*, Cilt:12 Sayı: (18. ÜİK Özel Sayısı), Sayfa: 72-100
- Özkan, C. (2017). İşin Anlamlılığının İş Performansı ve Sapma Davranışına Etkisi: Mersin İlinde Yapılan Bir Çalışma. Doktora Tezi (yayımlanmamış), Mersin Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, MERSİN
- Sığırı, Ü. (2007). Kamu ve Özel Sektördeki Kişisel ve Örgütsel Değerlerin Uyumlaştırılması Üzerine Karşılaştırmalı Bir Çalışma. *Muğla Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi*, Bahar, Sayı 18: 1-14
- Soysal, A. ve Aydoğan, S. ve Nurdoğan, B. (2019). Örgütsel Vatandaşlık Davranış Algısı ile İş Performansı Arasındaki İlişki: Hemşireler Üzerinde Bir Araştırma. *Kahramanmaraş Sütçü İmam Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi*, 9(2): 73-91.
- Şehitoğlu, Y. (2010), Örgütsel sessizlik örgütsel vatandaşlık davranışı ve algılanan çalışan performansı ilişkisi, Doktora Tezi (yayımlanmamış), Gebze Yüksek Teknoloji Enstitüsü, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Gebze.
- Yaralı, D. (2015). Özel Eğitim Dersine İlişkin Ölçek Geliştirme Çalışması: Geçerlik ve Güvenirlik. e – *Kafkas Eğitim Araştırmaları Dergisi*, 2(2), Ağustos Sayısı: 12-22
- Yılmaz, V. ve Turan A. (2019). Kamuda Performans Yönetiminin Önemi. *Erciyes Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi*, XLVI, 2019/1: 313-342
- Yücel, C. ve Karataş, E. (2009). Eğitim Yöneticilerinin Benimsedikleri İş Değerleri. *Ege Eğitim Dergisi*, 10(2): 70-101.

CHAPTER 12

THE IMPACT OF DIGITAL TRANSFORMATION ON STRATEGIC MANAGEMENT AND LOGISTIC PERFORMANCE IN BUSINESSES

SELVA STAUB¹

Digitalization and smart technologies have revolutionized logistics, bringing forth a new era of efficiency, visibility, and overall performance enhancement in supply chain management. Real-time visibility, driven by IoT and RFID technologies, allows instantaneous tracking of shipments, reducing delays and improving decision-making.

Data analytics and machine learning contribute predictive insights, optimizing demand forecasting and inventory management. An e-commerce platform utilizes data analytics to predict future demand, ensuring optimal inventory levels. Automation, exemplified by robotic systems in distribution centers, streamlines tasks, minimizes errors, and accelerates order fulfillment.

Blockchain ensures transparency and traceability in the supply chain, building trust. Cloud-based solutions facilitate real-time collaboration among supply chain stakeholders, enhancing coordination. E-commerce integration seamlessly connects online platforms with logistics operations, reducing lead times.

Smart warehousing, dynamic routing, and fleet management leverage technologies like AS/RS, drones, and GPS tracking, improving efficiency. Collaborative platforms foster real-time information sharing among stakeholders, while customer-centric solutions, like real-time shipment tracking, enhance customer satisfaction.

Sensor technology monitors real-time data, ensuring the integrity of sensitive shipments. Communication technology transmits data wirelessly, enabling real-time updates. A central database with analytics tools provides actionable insights, and instant notification mechanisms support quick decision-making.

Inventory tracking, supply chain visualization, rapid intervention, and improvements, along with enhanced demand forecasting and operational efficiency, further highlight the transformative impact of digitalization on logistics. A comprehensive SWOT analysis and strategic guide offer insights for

¹ Assoc. Dr., Selva STAUB.; Bandırma Onyedü Eylül Üniversitesi Ö.S. Uygulamalı Bilimler Fakültesi Uluslararası Ticaret ve Lojistik Bölümü. sstaub@bandirma.edu.tr ORCID No: 0000-0002-5188-6927

businesses to navigate the challenges and opportunities presented by digital transformation in logistics.

Keywords – Digital transformation, Strategic management, Logistic performance, new technologies, Sustainability

INTRODUCTION

The logistics service industry is currently undergoing a profound transformation, fueled by the swift progression of digital technologies. In response to the complexities of today's market environment, incumbent logistics service providers (LSPs) find themselves compelled to embrace digitalization to maintain competitiveness. This chapter aims to explore the multifaceted landscape of digital transformation within the logistics sector, shedding light on its impact on competitive dynamics, the imperative for value creation, the significant role of artificial intelligence (AI), and the strategic development required for success.

The imperative of digital transformation is evident in a market that is evolving at an unprecedented pace. Enterprises are not only required to survive but also to thrive by delivering enhanced customer experiences and services. Digital transformation emerges as a strategic pathway for organizations, enabling them to achieve competitiveness and foster value creation. However, this transformation extends beyond mere technology adoption; it involves organizational shifts and comprehensive changes, including strategic development.

Digital transformation is a holistic process involving a fusion of information technology implementation projects and organizational factors. Critical elements include top management support, a well-defined digital transformation strategy, organizational restructuring, and strategic development. This chapter seeks to unravel the intricacies of these processes, shedding light on the uncertainties surrounding infrastructure digital transformation and emphasizing the often-overlooked role of digital governance.

While digital transformation has become a ubiquitous term for gaining competitive advantages, its implications for the performance of logistics companies remain elusive. The transition from traditional to digital processes introduces challenges that impact overall firm performance. Research efforts have been directed toward understanding how adaptability, resource orchestration, and innovation capability influence digital transformation and subsequent effects on performance, with a special focus on the role of artificial intelligence and strategic development.

The contemporary business environment necessitates digital transformation for companies aiming to innovate and gain a competitive edge. Implementing effective digital transformation faces challenges related to the rapidly evolving digital economy and technological advancements. This chapter explores the complexities involved in optimizing business processes and developing competitive strategies while adapting to digital transformations, with a particular emphasis on the contributions of artificial intelligence and strategic development.

Set against the backdrop of the global economy experiencing varying degrees of impact, the logistics industry, as the foundation of social and economic operations, is undergoing significant changes. This section investigates the challenges posed by the COVID-19 pandemic and explores how factors like resource integration, contactless delivery, and intelligent operating platforms, augmented by artificial intelligence, are shaping the future of logistics enterprises, necessitating strategic development.

The exploration of emerging strategic perspectives in the logistics industry extends to focus on the three levels of the logistics value chain, delicate operation development, and digital logistics activities. Highlighting the applications of trending digital technologies, including blockchain and artificial intelligence, this chapter emphasizes their crucial role in enhancing competitiveness and aligning with business strategies and overall strategic development.

Therefore, as digital transformation, coupled with the integration of artificial intelligence and strategic development, continues to evolve within the logistics sector, this chapter aims to provide a comprehensive overview of the challenges, opportunities, and strategic considerations involved. By addressing the multifaceted aspects of digital transformation, AI contribution, and strategic development.

INTERACTION BETWEEN STRATEGIC MANAGEMENT PROCESSES AND LOGISTICS OPERATIONS

The interaction between strategic management processes and logistics operations constitutes a pivotal factor in determining the overall performance of a business. Understanding and optimizing this interplay are crucial for organizations seeking to thrive in dynamic and competitive environments. In this context, the impact of strategic management on logistics operations holds key insights into enhancing efficiency, customer satisfaction, and ultimately, the bottom line. Within this framework, we delve into key aspects that underscore the impact of strategic management on logistics operations, elucidating the

intricate relationship pivotal in shaping a business's success in the contemporary marketplace. These aspects include Supply Chain Optimization, Cost Control, Technological Integration, Sustainability, and Environmental Impacts, Flexibility and Adaptability, and Customer Satisfaction (Chao, 2022, Koldemir, 2020, Marzenna, et. al, 2020, Nur, & Abu, 2023, Patro & Raghunath, 2021, Sun, 2022, Tomaszewski, 2021, Vukšić, Ivančić & Vugec, 2018, Xue, et al, 2022).

Supply Chain Optimization

Strategic management, with a focus on supply chain management, aims to optimize supplier relationships, material flow, and inventory management. This ensures that logistics operations become more effective and efficient (Fenton, Fletcher & Griffiths, 2019).

In the context of strategic management processes and logistics operations, supply chain optimization is a significant strategic approach aimed at making a business's supply chain management more effective and efficient. Through supply chain optimization, businesses can reduce costs, enhance customer satisfaction, and gain a competitive advantage. Some of the key elements of these processes can be listed as:

Supply Chain Strategy Determination: Strategic management processes involve defining the supply chain strategy for the business. This strategy must align with the business's goals and market dynamics. Determining the supply chain strategy forms the foundation for other stages of operations.

Supplier Selection and Relationship Management: Strategic supply chain management includes selecting appropriate suppliers and effective relationship management with these suppliers. In supply chain optimization, collaborating with reliable and cost-effective suppliers holds strategic importance.

Inventory and Warehouse Management: Strategic management involves optimizing inventory levels and warehouse management. Identifying the right inventory levels and efficient warehouse management reduce costs and ensure quick delivery.

Logistics and Distribution Optimization: Strategic supply chain management includes optimizing logistics and distribution processes. Selecting the most suitable transportation routes, utilizing storage spaces effectively, and enhancing the efficiency of logistics operations are strategic decisions.

Technological Innovation and Automation: Strategic management includes technological innovation and automation. Technological solutions such as smart sensors, data analytics, and artificial intelligence make supply chain operations more efficient and enable swift decision-making.

Flexibility and Crisis Management: Strategic supply chain management involves the ability to quickly adapt to variable market conditions and crises. Flexibility allows continuous improvement of supply chain operations and enables rapid intervention during crisis situations.

Performance Measurement and Improvement: Strategic management processes include regularly measuring supply chain performance and identifying improvement opportunities. Data analytics and performance indicators facilitate the effective management of supply chain operations.

Supply chain optimization allows a business to gain a strategic advantage by addressing all supply chain processes cohesively. This reduces operational costs, enhances customer satisfaction, and strengthens the sustainability of the business.

For example in a conventional supply chain without digital transformation, the company relies on manual processes for order management, inventory tracking, and demand forecasting. Communication among suppliers, manufacturers, distributors, and retailers is often slow and prone to errors. This lack of real-time visibility results in inefficiencies, delays, and increased operational costs. However, when the business decides to implement a digital transformation initiative to optimize its supply chain. In traditional approach visibility is limited in inventory levels and order status. On the other hand, integration of IoT-enabled sensors and RFID technology for real-time tracking of goods throughout the supply chain. This provides instant visibility into the location and condition of products. From data analytics and predictive insights traditional approach relies on historical data for demand forecasting and inventory management. Implementation of advanced analytics and machine learning algorithms to analyze vast datasets. This enables predictive insights for demand forecasting, allowing the company to optimize inventory levels and reduce stockouts or overstock situations. Traditional approach utilizes Manual handling of inventory and order fulfillment processes. Introduction of automation in warehouses, incorporating robotic systems for picking and packing. This streamlines operations, reduces errors, and accelerates order fulfillment. Also, traditional approach is limited traceability and transparency in the supply chain. Integration of blockchain technology to record and verify transactions across the supply chain. This ensures transparency, traceability, and trust among all stakeholders. Additionally, traditional approach relies on localized data storage and processing. Adoption of cloud-based supply chain management systems for centralized data storage, processing, and accessibility. This enhances collaboration, communication, and responsiveness among supply chain partners.

As for the results and benefits company achieves real-time visibility, reducing delays and disruptions in the supply chain, data-driven decision-making improves demand forecasting accuracy and optimizes inventory levels, automation and robotics enhance warehouse efficiency, reducing operational costs, blockchain ensures transparency, reducing the risk of fraud and building trust, cloud-based solutions improve collaboration and responsiveness among supply chain partners.

Cost Control

Strategic management decisions can influence the cost structure of logistics operations. While cost-focused strategies aim to achieve savings in logistics processes, value-focused strategies aim to enhance quality, creating a competitive advantage.

In the context of strategic management processes and logistics operations, cost control is a significant strategic approach aiming to make a business's supply chain management more effective and efficient, with the goal of minimizing costs. Businesses can gain a competitive advantage by managing operational expenses through cost control strategies. Here are the key elements used for cost control in strategic management processes and logistics operations:

Budget Management: As part of strategic management processes, budget management compares planned and actual costs to identify budget variances. This ensures that logistics operations stay within budget limits.

Cost Analysis: Strategic management involves detailed cost analyses at every stage of logistics operations. Costs of elements such as transportation, storage, and inventory management are thoroughly evaluated.

Efficiency and Process Improvement: Continuous improvement ensures that logistics operations are managed more efficiently and effectively. Increases in efficiency in business processes can reduce costs.

Optimization: Optimization strategies such as route optimization, inventory management, and warehouse layout adjustments involve making strategic decisions to minimize logistics costs.

Supplier Relationships and Negotiations: Strategic management includes strengthening supplier relationships and the process of obtaining cost advantages. Negotiations and collaboration with suppliers are essential for cost reduction.

Technological Innovation and Automation: New technological solutions, automation, and digitalization strategies can increase cost control in logistics

operations. Tools like data analytics and sensor technologies contribute to more effective management of business processes.

Energy Efficiency and Sustainability: Strategic management involves setting energy efficiency and sustainability goals to reduce environmental impacts in operations and control energy costs in the long term.

Flexibility and Crisis Management: A flexible logistics operation can quickly adapt to unexpected situations and crises. The ability for instant intervention enables proactive measures against potential cost increases in operations.

When, a company follows a traditional supply chain model with manual processes for order processing, inventory management, and transportation, the lack of real-time data and inefficient communication leads to higher operational costs, excess inventory, and suboptimal transportation routes. If the company decides to implement digital transformation strategies to enhance cost control and optimize logistics due to limited visibility into inventory levels and order status, integration of IoT-enabled sensors and RFID technology provides real-time tracking of goods. This leads to improved visibility, allowing better control over inventory levels and reducing the risk of stockouts or overstock situations. In traditional methods, manual data analysis for demand forecasting and inventory optimization from data analytics and predictive insights is not optimal. From data analytics and predictive insights, manual data analysis for demand forecasting and inventory optimization can be transformed into a more efficient and accurate process through the utilization of advanced technologies and machine learning algorithms. These technologies enable the automated analysis of vast datasets, allowing businesses to extract actionable insights, make more informed decisions, and optimize supply chain processes with greater precision. In Traditional Approach, Manual handling of warehouse operations, leads to higher labor costs. Introduction of automation and robotics in warehouses streamlines processes. Automated picking and packing systems reduce labor costs, increase efficiency, and minimize errors. Also, with traditional Approach, Suboptimal transportation routes leading to increased fuel costs. Implementation of smart technologies for dynamic routing and fleet optimization. Real-time monitoring through GPS tracking and telematics helps in optimizing routes, reducing fuel consumption, and overall transportation costs. In addition to all this, traditional approach, relies on localized data storage and limited collaboration. Adoption of cloud-based supply chain management systems facilitates collaboration among different stakeholders. Centralized data storage improves coordination, communication, and responsiveness, reducing delays and associated costs.

As for the results and benefits, real-time visibility into the supply chain helps in better decision-making, reducing the risk of stockouts and excess inventory, predictive analytics enable accurate demand forecasting, optimizing inventory levels, and minimizing holding costs, Automation in warehouses reduces labor costs, improves efficiency, and minimizes errors in order fulfillment, dynamic routing and fleet management optimize transportation costs by identifying the most cost-effective routes, cloud-based solutions enhance collaboration, communication, and responsiveness, reducing delays and operational costs.

The overall Impact of the digital transformation initiatives contribute to significant cost control measures throughout the supply chain. The company experiences reduced operational costs, improved efficiency, and better strategic decision-making, leading to enhanced logistic performance.

Technological Integration

Strategic management closely monitors technological advancements in logistics and can make decisions regarding their integration into business processes. Innovations such as digitization, automation, artificial intelligence, and big data analytics can make logistics operations faster and more precise.

In the context of strategic management processes and logistics operations, technological integration signifies the strategic use of technological solutions to make a business's logistics processes more efficient, rapid, and flexible. Businesses can optimize logistics operations, reduce costs, and enhance customer satisfaction through technological integration. Here are the key elements used in this process:

Smart Sensors and IoT (Internet of Things): Smart sensors and IoT technologies enable real-time monitoring of material movements and inventory status. This helps optimize inventory management, make quick decisions, and enhance the effectiveness of logistics operations.

Data Analytics and Big Data Usage: Data analytics and big data analyze extensive datasets from supply chain processes, providing valuable insights for businesses to make strategic decisions. They are used in areas such as demand forecasting, inventory management, and analysis of logistics operations.

Automation and Robotic Processes: Automation and robotic processes automate tasks such as warehouse management, material handling, and packaging, reducing human errors, increasing operational efficiency, and lowering costs.

Artificial Intelligence (AI) and Machine Learning: AI and machine learning can improve complex decision-making processes in logistics. Used in areas like

demand forecasting, route optimization, and inventory management, they make operations smarter and more flexible.

Blockchain Technology: Blockchain provides transparency and reliability in supply chain processes. It can be used to track material movements, prevent fraud, and build trust among supply chain stakeholders.

E-commerce and E-commerce Integration: Digitization enables the effective management of customer orders through e-commerce and e-commerce platforms. This optimizes order fulfillment processes and increases customer satisfaction.

Optimization and Cost Control: Digitization can reduce costs by optimizing supply chain processes. It enables smarter decision-making in areas such as selecting the optimal transportation routes, optimizing inventory levels, and managing supplier relationships (Chao, 2022, Koldemir, 2020).

Technological integration can strengthen businesses' competitive advantages in logistics operations by providing greater visibility, the ability to make quick decisions, and increased customer satisfaction.

For example, if a company operates with separate and siloed systems for order processing, inventory management, and transportation, lack of integration results in data discrepancies, delays in information flow, and inefficiencies in the supply chain. When the company decides to undergo digital transformation by integrating advanced technologies for seamless operations and improved logistic performance, it signifies a strategic shift towards enhancing efficiency, embracing innovation, and staying competitive in the rapidly evolving business landscape. In the traditional approach, limited visibility with delayed updates on inventory and shipment status hinders the ability to make timely and informed decisions, potentially leading to inefficiencies, increased operational costs, and a diminished overall supply chain performance. Implementation of IoT-enabled sensors and RFID technology for real-time tracking ensures instant updates on inventory levels and shipment locations, improving visibility across the supply chain. In the traditional approach, data analytics and predictive insights often rely on manual data analysis and outdated reporting systems. However, with the impact of digital transformation, there is a shift towards integrating advanced analytics tools and machine learning algorithms. This transformation empowers the company to analyze large datasets, extract actionable insights, and make informed, data-driven decisions, particularly in areas such as demand forecasting and inventory optimization. While, in the traditional approach, manual processes in warehouses and distribution centers hinder the process, the integration of automated systems for picking, packing, and sorting enhances efficiency, reduces errors, and accelerates order fulfillment in digital

transformation. Also, in the traditional approach, there is a lack of transparency in the supply chain, leading to trust issues. However, with the integration of blockchain technology for transparency and traceability, every transaction is recorded on an immutable ledger, ensuring data integrity and building trust among supply chain stakeholders. Additionally, traditional approach, relies on on-premise systems with limited accessibility. Integration of cloud-based supply chain management systems. This allows real-time collaboration, data sharing, and accessibility from anywhere, improving coordination among different supply chain partners.

As for the results and benefits, real-time visibility improves decision-making, reduces delays, and minimizes disruptions in the supply chain, data analytics and predictive insights enhance demand forecasting, inventory management, and proactive issue resolution, automation in warehouses reduces operational costs, errors, and speeds up order fulfillment, blockchain ensures transparency, traceability, and trust, addressing issues related to data integrity in the supply chain, cloud-based solutions facilitate seamless collaboration, communication, and responsiveness among supply chain partners.

Overall Impact of the integration of advanced technologies results in a more connected and efficient supply chain. The company experiences enhanced logistic performance, reduced operational costs, and improved strategic decision-making.

Sustainability and Environmental Impacts

Strategic management, by setting sustainability goals, aims to manage the environmental impacts of logistics operations. Green logistics practices and eco-friendly supply chain strategies can help reduce costs while increasing environmental sustainability (Akandere, 2021, Diófási-Kovács, 2021 Ceran, Ortakarpuz & Erkoçak, 2022, Gürcan, 2022).

In the context of strategic management processes and logistics operations, sustainability and environmental impacts constitute a significant strategic focus for businesses aiming to manage their activities more environmentally responsibly. This involves reducing environmental impacts, using resources more efficiently, lowering carbon footprints, and implementing sustainable supply chain practices. Here are the key elements used in this context:

Green Logistics and Low-Carbon Transportation: Strategic management processes involve adopting low-carbon and environmentally friendly methods in transportation operations. Solutions such as electric vehicles, light transport modes, and route optimization can reduce carbon footprints.

Sustainable Material and Packaging Use: Strategic management in logistics operations encourages the use of sustainable materials and packaging. Preference for recyclable materials can reduce waste and minimize environmental impacts.

Sustainable Storage and Warehouse Management: Strategic management processes aim to increase energy efficiency in storage operations, using environmentally friendly lighting and heating systems. It also ensures compliance with sustainability principles in warehouse design and layout.

Supply Chain Traceability: Sustainability strategies include providing traceability at every stage of the supply chain. Determining the source of products, checking compliance with environmental and ethical standards, and offering transparent information to customers are crucial for a sustainable supply chain.

Energy Efficiency and Green Energy Use: Strategic management involves increasing energy efficiency and using green energy sources. Energy efficiency is important at every stage, from warehouses to transportation vehicles.

Recycling and Waste Management: Sustainability aims to minimize waste and promote recycling processes. Practices such as recycling packaging materials and proper disposal of used equipment are essential.

Environmentally Friendly Technologies and Innovations: Strategic management processes include investing in environmentally friendly technologies and promoting sustainable innovations. This involves developing new solutions that will reduce environmental impacts.

Sustainability and environmental impacts represent a strategic approach in logistics operations, aiming not only to fulfill environmental responsibilities but also to reduce costs. These strategies can create a positive brand perception among customers and stakeholders, providing a competitive advantage.

However, recognizing the need for improvement, companies need to embrace digital transformation to enhance sustainability in its logistics operations. This involves integrating advanced technologies to optimize transportation routes for fuel efficiency, implementing real-time tracking systems to monitor and minimize environmental impact, and adopting eco-friendly practices throughout the supply chain. In the traditional approach, fixed transportation routes do not consider minimal fuel efficiency. Implementation of smart technologies for dynamic routing and fleet management, including GPS tracking, telematics, and predictive analytics, is employed to optimize routes, reduce fuel consumption, and minimize the carbon footprint. Limited visibility into the environmental impact of the entire supply chain is addressed through the integration of real-time monitoring and visualization tools. The

company can now assess and visualize the environmental impact of each stage in the supply chain, from manufacturing to distribution. Also, in the traditional approach, the lack of tools to measure and analyze the sustainability of logistics operations is overcome by the implementation of sustainability analytics tools. The company can now measure and analyze key environmental metrics, such as carbon emissions, energy consumption, and waste generation, across its logistics operations. Additionally, in the traditional approach, reliance on traditional vehicles with higher emissions is mitigated by the adoption of green technologies, such as electric or hybrid vehicles. The company invests in eco-friendly transportation options, reducing its overall carbon footprint. And also, in the traditional approach, there is limited collaboration with supply chain partners on sustainability initiatives. However, through the integration of collaborative platforms for supply chain partners, the company now collaborates with suppliers, manufacturers, and distributors on sustainable practices, sharing real-time data and insights.

As for the results and benefits, optimized transportation routes and fleet management reduce fuel consumption and greenhouse gas emissions, supply chain visualization provides transparency into the environmental impact of each supply chain stage, allowing for targeted improvements, sustainability analytics enable data-driven decisions to further reduce the company's environmental footprint, adoption of green technologies contributes to a more sustainable and eco-friendly transportation fleet, collaboration on sustainability initiatives enhances overall supply chain sustainability.

Flexibility and Adaptability

Strategic management emphasizes flexibility and adaptability to respond to changing market conditions and gain a competitive advantage. This enables logistics operations to quickly respond to demand fluctuations and embrace continuous improvement processes (Gündem & Akatay, 2021).

In the context of strategic management processes and logistics operations, flexibility and adaptability represent the ability of businesses to adapt to rapidly changing market conditions and cope with unexpected situations. Flexibility and adaptability enable continuous improvement in supply chain management and logistics operations, meeting changing customer demands, and sustaining a competitive advantage. Here are the key elements used in this context:

Flexible Supply Chain Design: Strategic management processes prioritize flexibility in supply chain design. Organizing the supply chain to quickly adapt to different variables provides resistance to changes in demand and operational risks.

Inventory and Demand Management: Flexibility includes inventory management and demand forecasting processes. Determining the right inventory levels and keeping demand forecasts up-to-date are essential for responding quickly to changing demands.

Multiple Suppliers and Multiple Production Sources: Strategic management involves using various suppliers and production sources. This reduces risks in the supply chain and enhances resilience against potential issues in the supply sources.

Innovation and Technological Flexibility: Strategic management processes include continuous innovation in the technologies used in logistics operations. Adapting quickly to new technological solutions enhances operational efficiency.

Flexible Distribution Networks and Routes: Flexible distribution networks and transportation routes involve adapting to changing demand and operational requirements. Geographic flexibility facilitates the adaptation of logistics operations to changing conditions.

Employee Training and Flexible Working Models: Strategic management includes employee training and development along with flexible working models. This allows employees to quickly adapt to various tasks and cope with changing job requirements.

Risk Management and Crisis Planning: Flexibility includes risk management and crisis planning strategies. Being prepared for various operational risks and having plans for effective intervention in crisis situations is crucial.

Quick Decision-Making Ability: A flexible management process requires the ability to make quick decisions. Making rapid decisions based on real-time data is important for dealing with unexpected situations in operations.

Flexibility and adaptability enable businesses to quickly adapt to changing market conditions and help them gain a competitive advantage. These strategies also increase customer satisfaction and ensure operational continuity.

When a company operates with conventional logistics practices that lack real-time data, leading to challenges in adapting to sudden changes in demand, supply chain disruptions, and market Dynamics, it is necessary to undergo digital transformation to enhance flexibility and adaptability in its logistics operations. In the traditional approach, limited visibility into real-time data makes it challenging to respond quickly to changes. With the implementation of real-time tracking using IoT-enabled sensors and RFID technology, advanced data analytics tools are utilized to extract actionable insights. Company can have immediate visibility into inventory levels, shipment status, and demand fluctuations. In the traditional approach, fixed transportation routes and static

inventory management practices may prevail. With the introduction of dynamic routing and inventory management, smart technologies optimize transportation routes and ensure that inventory levels are dynamically adjusted based on real-time demand forecasts. In the traditional approach, collaboration among supply chain stakeholders is limited due to communication barriers. With the adoption of cloud-based solutions for seamless collaboration, the company and its partners can now access and share real-time data, fostering improved communication, quick decision-making, and joint responses to market changes. Also, in the conventional approach, manual and time-consuming processes are prevalent in warehouses and distribution centers. However, with the integration of automation and robotics, automated warehouses and robotic systems streamline processes, enabling faster order fulfillment, reducing errors, and providing scalability to adapt to fluctuating demand. Furthermore, in the traditional approach, there is a limited presence in online sales channels. However, with the integration with e-commerce platforms, the company expands its sales channels, reaching a broader customer base. Integration with logistics operations ensures quick order processing and fulfillment.

As for the results and benefits, real-time visibility and data analytics enable proactive decision-making in response to changes in demand or supply chain disruptions, dynamic routing and inventory management optimize logistics operations for greater flexibility in handling fluctuations in demand, cloud-based collaboration enhances communication and coordination among supply chain partners, facilitating swift adjustments to market Dynamics, automation and robotics improve warehouse efficiency, enabling rapid adaptation to changes in order volume and product demand, e-commerce integration provides additional sales channels and quick order fulfillment, meeting changing customer preferences.

Overall, the digital transformation focused on flexibility and adaptability results in a logistics ecosystem that can swiftly respond to market changes, customer demands, and unforeseen disruptions. The company gains a competitive edge by being agile and adaptable in its operations.

Customer Satisfaction

Strategic management may aim to enhance customer satisfaction through customer-focused logistics strategies. Fast delivery, accurate inventory management, and effective logistics operations can increase customer loyalty.

Strategic management processes and customer satisfaction in logistics operations involve aligning the business's logistics operations to offer valuable services to customers, increase customer satisfaction, and build long-term

customer relationships. Customer satisfaction should be considered at every stage of logistics operations and integrated into strategic management processes. Here are the key elements used in this context:

Fast and Reliable Delivery Services: Strategic management optimizes processes to ensure fast and reliable deliveries in logistics operations. Proper inventory management, efficient transportation planning, and delivery process traceability increase customer satisfaction.

Effective Inventory Management: Strategic management optimizes inventory management processes. Determining the right inventory levels ensures that the necessary products are always in stock to meet demands.

Traceability and Transparent Information Provision: Providing information such as order status, delivery process, and inventory information to customers enhances traceability and transparency. Customers tracking their orders easily increases satisfaction.

Well-Designed Customer Communication: Strategic management determines customer communication strategies. Establishing strong connections with customers through regular updates, campaign information, and support services is essential.

Flexible and Customer-Focused Return Policies: Establishing flexible and customer-friendly policies in the return process builds customer trust. Quick and seamless return processes increase customer satisfaction.

Customer Feedback and Improvement: Customer feedback is important for measuring customer satisfaction. This feedback helps businesses understand their shortcomings and continuously improve their services.

Employee Training and Customer Service: Strategic management optimizes employee training and customer service processes. Employee training in customer-oriented practices ensures effective customer service.

Supply Chain Transparency: Providing transparency in the supply chain to customers, such as sharing information about product origin and transportation, enhances customer satisfaction.

Customer satisfaction is not only related to product quality but also linked to the efficiency of logistics operations and the quality of customer services. Strategic management aims to maximize customer satisfaction by combining these factors.

If a company relies on conventional logistics practices that result in limited visibility into order status, delayed communication with customers, and challenges in meeting evolving customer expectations, the implementation of real-time tracking, communication technologies, and customer-centric solutions can address these issues. By adopting digital transformation, the company can

provide real-time updates to customers, enhance communication efficiency, and meet evolving expectations effectively.

With the traditional Approach, customers lack real-time visibility into the status of their orders, leading to uncertainty and dissatisfaction. Implementation of real-time tracking using IoT-enabled sensors and RFID technology, customers receive instant updates on the location and status of their shipments through mobile apps or online portals. In the traditional approach, limitations exist in online sales channels, and logistics processes are disconnected. However, through seamless integration of e-commerce platforms with logistics operations, customers can now place orders online. The company ensures quick and accurate order processing, ultimately reducing lead times. In the traditional approach, there are limitations in customer-centric features, such as personalized services or real-time support. However, with the introduction of customer-centric solutions, the company implements real-time shipment tracking, personalized services, and easy return processes. This enhancement contributes to an overall improved customer experience. In the traditional approach, reliance on traditional communication methods often leads to delays and misunderstandings. However, with the adoption of modern communication technologies, such as automated notifications, instant messaging, and chat support, the company can provide customers with timely and accurate information. Also, in the traditional approach, challenges arise in accurately forecasting demand, which can result in stockouts or excess inventory. However, with the utilization of data analytics and machine learning for demand forecasting, the company can predict customer demand more accurately, ensuring that products are available when needed.

As for the results and benefits, real-time visibility and communication enhance customer trust by providing accurate and up-to-date information on order status and delivery, e-commerce integration enables customers to make purchases conveniently, leading to a seamless and efficient order fulfillment process, customer-centric solutions, such as real-time tracking and personalized services, contribute to a positive customer experience and increased loyalty, communication technology ensures quick responses to customer inquiries and concerns, fostering better relationships, data analytics for demand forecasting improves inventory management, reducing stockouts and excess inventory, ultimately meeting customer expectations.

INTEGRATION OF TECHNOLOGY INTO BUSINESS PROCESSES AND STRATEGIC MANAGEMENT

The integration of technology into logistics processes stands as a crucial pillar within the domain of strategic management in the logistics sector. This integration provides logistics companies with the capability to remain current with technological advancements, embed these cutting-edge technologies into their day-to-day operations, and effectively achieve their strategic goals. The strategic infusion of technology into business processes empowers organizations to optimize logistics activities, fostering greater efficiency, transparency, and overall effectiveness. This strategic methodology encompasses staying abreast of technological advancements, seamlessly integrating these innovations into operational workflows, and realizing strategic objectives. The primary objective of this integration is to enhance logistics processes, curtail costs, expedite operational speed, and elevate customer satisfaction by leveraging a spectrum of technological solutions. The foundational elements employed within this framework include (Cichosz, 2018, Gündem & Akatay, 2021 Marzenna et al, 2020, Oğan & Wolff, 2022, Shrestha & Kumar, 2022, Sun, 2022, Tomaszewski, 2021):

Digitalization and Process Optimization: Strategic management in the logistics sector can establish specific goals for the digitalization and optimization of logistics processes. Digitalizing these processes enhances efficiency and reduces operational costs.

Big Data Analytics and Decision-Making: Big data analytics becomes a supportive tool for strategic decision-making in logistics. Businesses can make more informed decisions, understand market trends, and gain a competitive advantage through the insights derived from big data analytics.

Automation and Robotic Processes: Strategic management within logistics may focus on automating repetitive tasks within logistics processes. The implementation of robotic process automation enhances operational efficiency, allowing human resources to be redirected toward more strategic tasks.

Artificial Intelligence and Machine Learning: Artificial intelligence (AI) and machine learning can be integrated into strategic management processes in logistics. Applications include demand forecasting, inventory management, and optimizing customer relationship management.

Blockchain Technology and Supply Chain Transparency: Utilizing blockchain technology to enhance transparency in the supply chain becomes a strategic initiative. Strategic management in logistics can leverage blockchain for establishing secure and transparent supply chain networks.

E-commerce and Digital Marketing Integration: Digital marketing and e-commerce strategies can seamlessly integrate into strategic management processes within logistics. This enables logistics businesses to effectively reach customers through online marketing channels, thereby enhancing sales.

Internet of Things (IoT) and Smart Logistics: IoT technologies provide real-time monitoring and data collection capabilities in logistics operations. Strategic management in logistics can focus on optimizing logistics processes using the data generated by IoT devices.

Data Security and Risk Management: Establishing data security and risk management strategies becomes a key focus for strategic management in logistics to securely navigate the process of technology integration.

Technological Innovation and Competitive Advantage: Innovation strategies within logistics involve integrating technological advancements into business processes. This integration is a crucial element for gaining a competitive advantage in the dynamic logistics landscape.

Training and Change Management: To adapt to technological changes and ensure a smooth transition for employees, strategic management in logistics can define strategies for training and change management.

These technological integrations enable logistics operations to be more effective, efficient, and customer-focused. Strategic management processes, by turning this integration of technology into a strategy, assist businesses in strengthening their competitive advantage.

ADVANTAGES AND CHALLENGES OF INTEGRATING TECHNOLOGY INTO BUSINESS PROCESSES IN THE LOGISTICS SECTOR

The integration of technology into logistics processes brings a series of advantages and challenges in the logistics sector. Here are the key elements on this matter (Akandere, 2021, Ceran, Ortakarpuz & Erkoçak, 2022, Liu et.al, 2020, Muhammad, Anton &Widjaja, 2022, Oğan & Wolff, 2022 Özkan, & Raşit, 2022, Patro & Raghunath, 2021, Reis, et al., 2018, Shrestha & Kumar, 2022, Yanginlar & Köksal, 2022):

Table 1: Advantages and challenges of integration of technology into logistics processes

Advantages:		Challenges:	
Increased Efficiency:	Technology integration allows the automation of processes in logistics operations, leading to increased efficiency. This enables faster and error-free execution of business processes.	High Initial Costs:	The implementation of advanced technological solutions often requires high initial costs. This can be a disadvantage, particularly for small and medium-sized enterprises.
Traceability and Transparency:	Smart sensors, IoT, and other technological solutions allow real-time tracking of material movements, providing transparency across the supply chain. This offers greater visibility to customers and businesses.	Security Risks:	Digitization and technology integration can increase data security risks. This is particularly crucial when sensitive information is present in the supply chain, requiring a focus on cybersecurity.
Robotics and Automation:	The use of robotics and automation in processes such as warehouse management, material handling, and packaging speeds up operations, reduces errors, and lowers operational costs.	Human Resources Training:	The adoption of new technologies necessitates training for personnel. This process not only requires the ability to adapt quickly to changes in business processes but may also incur additional costs for staff training.
Cost Savings:	Technological integrations like automation and data analytics help reduce business costs. Effective use of data ensures the efficient management of resources.	Technology Dependency:	With technology integration, businesses may become dependent on technology. In such cases, technical issues or system failures could disrupt operations.
Fast and Accurate Information Flow:	Technological integration enables real-time data flow in logistics processes, allowing for accurate and instant decision-making.	Rapidly Changing Technology:	Selecting and sustaining suitable technology for logistics businesses can be challenging due to the rapid evolution of technology.
Big Data Analytics:	Big data analytics enables businesses to analyze	Technology Dependency:	With technology integration, businesses

	supply chain data, empowering them to make strategic decisions which results in more effective decisions in areas such as demand forecasting, inventory management, and transportation optimization.		may become dependent on technology. In such cases, technical issues or system failures could disrupt operations.
E-commerce Integration:	Technology facilitates the integration of e-commerce platforms into logistics processes. This enables more efficient management of customer orders and allows for swift deliveries	Technology Compatibility Issues:	Choosing and integrating technology that is compatible with existing business processes can be a challenge for organizations. Compatibility issues may lead to disruptions in processes and loss of efficiency.
Customer Satisfaction:	Faster deliveries, traceability, and accurate inventory management increase customer satisfaction. Customers expect more transparency in tracking the status of their orders.	Operational Disruptions:	Transitioning to new technological systems may cause temporary operational disruptions within the business, potentially impacting customer services.
Inventory Management and Demand Forecasting:	Big data analytics and artificial intelligence (AI) help optimize inventory management and enhance demand forecasting, reducing waste.		
Environmental Sustainability:	Technological integrations contribute to reducing the environmental impact of logistics processes in areas such as energy efficiency, smart transportation planning, and eco-friendly practices.		

Source: Created by the author

The integration of technology into logistics processes, with the right strategy and careful planning, can provide significant advantages to businesses.

However, these potential challenges should also be considered and addressed during implementation.

THE CONTRIBUTIONS OF DIGITALIZATION AND SMART TECHNOLOGIES TO SUPPLY CHAIN MANAGEMENT IN LOGISTICS

Digitalization and smart technologies have significantly transformed supply chain management in logistics, contributing to increased efficiency, visibility, and overall performance. Here are some key contributions Cichosz, 2018, Koldemir, 2020, Nur & Abu, 2023, Oğan & Wolff, 2022 Özkan & Raşit, 2022):

Real-Time Visibility: Digitalization provides real-time tracking of shipments and inventory in logistics. IoT-enabled sensors and RFID technology offer accurate, instant information on goods' location and condition. This visibility reduces delays, minimizes disruptions, and enhances decision-making. Foreexample, a logistics company uses IoT-enabled sensors on its cargo containers. These sensors provide real-time data on the container's location, temperature, and humidity. If there's a deviation from the optimal conditions, an alert is triggered, allowing immediate corrective action.

Data Analytics and Predictive Insights: Digital technologies enable the collection and analysis of vast data sets. Advanced analytics and machine learning extract actionable insights for demand forecasting, inventory optimization, and proactive issue resolution in supply chain management. Foreexample, an e-commerce platform employs data analytics to analyze historical sales data. Using machine learning algorithms, the platform predicts future demand for certain products. This helps in optimizing inventory levels, ensuring that popular items are adequately stocked.

Automation and Robotics: Automation in logistics streamlines tasks using smart technologies. Automated warehouses, robotic packing systems, and autonomous vehicles enhance efficiency, reduce errors, and accelerate operations. Foreexample, a distribution center incorporates robotic systems for order picking and packing. Automated guided vehicles (AGVs) transport goods within the warehouse, and robots handle repetitive tasks. This automation reduces human errors, increases efficiency, and speeds up order fulfillment.

Blockchain for Transparency and Traceability: Blockchain ensures transparency by tracking material movements and preventing fraud. It secures the supply chain data, enhances traceability, and builds trust among stakeholders. Foreexample, a food retailer uses blockchain to trace the origin of its products. Each step in the supply chain, from farm to store, is recorded on

the blockchain. Consumers can scan a QR code to view the entire journey of a product, ensuring transparency and authenticity

Cloud-Based Solutions: Cloud computing supports data storage, processing, and accessibility. Cloud-based supply chain management systems enhance coordination, communication, and responsiveness among different supply chain parties. Foreexample, a global logistics company utilizes a cloud-based supply chain management system. This system allows real-time collaboration among different parties, such as suppliers, manufacturers, and distributors, improving overall coordination and responsiveness.

E-Commerce Integration: Digitalization integrates e-commerce channels seamlessly with logistics operations, improving order fulfillment, reducing lead times, and enhancing customer satisfaction. Foreexample, an online retailer integrates its e-commerce platform with its logistics system. When a customer places an order, the logistics system is automatically notified, triggering order processing, packaging, and shipping. This integration reduces manual intervention and speeds up order fulfillment.

Smart Warehousing: Integration of smart technologies, such as AS/RS, drones, and robots, optimizes warehouse management. These technologies improve inventory accuracy, reduce handling costs, and increase order fulfillment speed. Foreexample, a large warehouse incorporates AS/RS (Automated Storage and Retrieval System). Robots are deployed to handle tasks like picking, packing, and shelving. Drones are used for inventory checks. These technologies improve accuracy, reduce costs, and enhance overall warehouse efficiency.

Dynamic Routing and Fleet Management: Smart technologies enable dynamic routing and optimization of transportation networks. GPS tracking, telematics, and predictive analytics monitor vehicles in real time, optimizing routes and reducing fuel consumption. Foreexample, a transportation company uses GPS tracking and predictive analytics to optimize delivery routes. Telematics devices monitor vehicle health in real-time. This data is used to schedule preventive maintenance, reducing the risk of breakdowns.

Collaborative Platforms: Digital platforms facilitate communication and coordination among supply chain stakeholders. Real-time information sharing helps build stronger partnerships and respond quickly to changes in demand or supply. Foreexample, multiple stakeholders in a supply chain (manufacturers, distributors, retailers) use a collaborative platform. This platform allows them to share real-time information on inventory levels, demand forecasts, and production schedules, fostering better collaboration and decision-making.

Customer-Centric Solutions: Digitalization allows for customer-centric solutions like real-time shipment tracking and personalized services, enhancing customer satisfaction and loyalty. Foreexample, an e-commerce company provides real-time shipment tracking to its customers. Through a mobile app, customers can see the exact location of their package and receive notifications on delivery times. This transparency enhances the overall customer experience.

Sensor Technology: Sensors measure data like location, temperature, and vibration for real-time tracking and monitoring, enhancing logistics efficiency. Foreexample, temperature sensors are used in the transportation of pharmaceuticals. These sensors continuously monitor the temperature inside the shipping container. If the temperature deviates from the specified range, an alert is sent to ensure the integrity of the sensitive products.

Communication Technology: Data collected is transmitted through wireless or wired communication technologies like the internet, mobile networks, and RFID. Foreexample, an international logistics network uses RFID technology for container tracking. RFID tags on containers communicate with readers at ports, providing real-time updates on the container's location and movement.

Central Database and Analytics: Collected data is analyzed in a central database using big data analytics, artificial intelligence, and machine learning. Foreexample, a retail chain consolidates data from various sources (point-of-sale systems, inventory databases) into a central database. Analytics tools then analyze this data to gain insights into consumer behavior, helping in strategic decision-making.

Instant Notification and Reporting: Analyzed data is instantly communicated through notifications and reports, enabling quick decision-making. Foreexample, an airline cargo service uses real-time reporting tools. If there's a delay or an issue with a shipment, instant notifications are sent to relevant stakeholders, allowing for quick intervention and communication.

Inventory Tracking: Real-time tracking enables continuous monitoring of inventory, optimizing stock levels and preventing losses. Foreexample, RFID tags and barcodes are used to track inventory in a warehouse. As items move through the supply chain, their status is updated in real-time, allowing for accurate and continuous monitoring of stock levels.

Supply Chain Visualization: Real-time monitoring visualizes supply chain processes, providing real-time mapping for better understanding. Foreexample, a supply chain manager uses a visualization tool to track the flow of goods from suppliers to end-users. This real-time map helps identify bottlenecks, optimize routes, and enhance overall supply chain visibility.

Rapid Intervention and Improvements: Real-time tracking enables early issue detection and intervention, supporting continuous process improvement. Foreexample, a logistics company monitors delivery times in real-time. If a vehicle is delayed, alternative routes are immediately suggested to ensure timely deliveries and prevent disruptions.

Improvement in Demand Forecasting: Real-time data keeps demand forecasting models up to date, optimizing inventory management and fulfillment processes. Foreexample, a consumer electronics manufacturer uses real-time sales data and customer feedback to continuously update its demand forecasting models. This agile approach helps in adapting to changing market trends.

Operational Efficiency: Real-time monitoring tracks delays and activities in operational processes, enhancing efficiency and process management. Foreexample, an e-commerce fulfillment center uses automation to streamline its order processing. Robots efficiently move products from shelves to packing stations, reducing the time it takes to fulfill customer orders.

Customer Satisfaction: Instant tracking increases customer satisfaction by providing real-time updates on order status. Foreexample, an online grocery delivery service provides real-time updates to customers on the status of their deliveries. This transparency and communication contribute to high customer satisfaction.

Risk Management: Real-time tracking identifies and mitigates risks quickly, such as determining alternative routes during unexpected events. Foreexample, a logistics company uses real-time tracking to identify potential risks, such as adverse weather conditions. With this information, alternative routes can be planned in advance to mitigate the impact on delivery schedules.

SWOT analysis of the impact of digital transformation on strategic management and logistics performance in businesses:

Strengths	Weaknesses
Increase in Efficiency: Digital transformation automates business processes, enhancing efficiency in logistics operations through smart sensors, big data analytics, and automation.	High Initial Costs: Digital transformation projects often incur high initial costs, acting as a barrier for small and medium-sized enterprises.
Strategic Decision-Making Capability: Businesses can analyze vast amounts of data for strategic decision-making, especially beneficial in logistics operations for areas like demand forecasting, inventory management, and supply chain optimization.	Technology Adaptation Challenges: Selecting and integrating technology that aligns with existing processes can be challenging, leading to disruptions and compatibility issues.
Customer Satisfaction: Digital transformation allows businesses to offer better services, such as online order tracking, fast delivery, and personalized campaigns, contributing to increased customer satisfaction.	
Effective Communication and Traceability: Digital platforms enable better control over the supply chain, facilitating real-time tracking of material movements and improving communication and traceability.	
Opportunities	Threats
New Markets and Customer Segments: Digital transformation enables businesses to enter online markets and reach new customer segments.	Security Risks: Digital transformation may increase data security risks, posing serious threats without proper measures against system security and cyber attacks.
Innovation and Competitive Advantage: Digital transformation enhances businesses' innovation capacity, providing opportunities to gain a competitive advantage through the use of innovative technologies.	Personnel Training and Resistance to Change: The use of new technologies requires personnel training, and there may be resistance to digital transformation among existing staff.

SWOT analysis is a crucial tool for understanding the current state of a business and identifying opportunities and challenges it may encounter during the digital transformation process. This analysis emphasizes factors that businesses should consider when developing their digital transformation strategies.

To develop a business strategy for minimizing the impact of digital transformation on logistic performance, you need to focus on mitigating

potential challenges and ensuring a smooth transition. Here are steps to develop such a strategy:

Assess Potential Disruptions: Identify potential disruptions that may arise during the digital transformation process. This could include resistance from employees, system integration challenges, or temporary decreases in productivity.

Create a Change Management Plan: Develop a comprehensive change management plan that addresses the human aspects of digital transformation. Communicate the benefits of the changes, provide training programs, and establish support mechanisms for employees.

Risk Assessment and Mitigation: Conduct a thorough risk assessment to identify potential risks associated with digital transformation. Develop mitigation strategies to address these risks and ensure a proactive response to unexpected challenges.

Prioritize Employee Involvement: Involve employees in the decision-making process and provide them with a sense of ownership in the digital transformation. Encourage feedback and address concerns to minimize resistance.

Phased Implementation: Consider a phased implementation approach rather than a sudden, full-scale transformation. This allows for smoother integration, reduced disruption, and the ability to learn from each phase.

Invest in Training and Development: Invest in training programs to upskill employees on the new technologies and processes. This not only reduces the impact on performance but also empowers employees to contribute to the success of the digital transformation.

Communicate Clearly and Transparently: Maintain clear and transparent communication throughout the digital transformation process. Keep employees, stakeholders, and customers informed about the changes, timelines, and expected outcomes.

Ensure Data Security and Compliance: Prioritize data security and compliance during the transformation. Implement measures to safeguard sensitive information, and ensure that all changes align with relevant regulations and standards.

Test and Validate: Before full implementation, conduct pilot tests and validation processes to identify any unforeseen issues. Use the results to make necessary adjustments and improvements before scaling up.

Collaborate with Stakeholders: Foster collaboration with key stakeholders, including suppliers, partners, and customers. Ensure that they are aware of the

changes and how these changes might impact their interactions with your logistics processes.

Continuous Monitoring and Feedback: Implement a system for continuous monitoring of logistics performance during and after the digital transformation. Gather feedback from employees and stakeholders, and use this information to make ongoing improvements.

Establish Key Performance Indicators (KPIs): Define and monitor KPIs that measure the impact of digital transformation on logistic performance. Regularly assess these KPIs to ensure that the intended benefits are being realized.

Iterative Optimization: Treat digital transformation as an iterative process. Continuously assess performance, gather insights, and optimize logistics processes. This ongoing optimization ensures that the impact on logistic performance is minimized over time.

Anticipate and Address Resistance: Recognize that resistance to change is natural. Anticipate potential sources of resistance and proactively address them through communication, training, and involving employees in decision-making.

By following these steps, businesses can develop a comprehensive strategy for minimizing the impact of digital transformation on logistic performance. This approach prioritizes a smooth transition, employee engagement, and continuous improvement, ultimately leading to a successful digital transformation with minimal disruptions.

CONCLUSION

In conclusion, the chapter effectively illustrates the intricate relationship between strategic management processes and the integration of digital technologies in logistics. It emphasizes that strategic decisions are pivotal in optimizing the supply chain, controlling costs, and harnessing the potential of technology for enhanced customer satisfaction. The presented examples offer practical insights into how businesses can strategically navigate the evolving market landscape by aligning management decisions with logistics operations.

RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

Results

The results section succinctly summarizes the tangible benefits derived from the integration of digital technologies into logistics operations. Supply chain optimization leads to real-time visibility, reduced operational costs, and enhanced sustainability. Cost control strategies result in reduced costs, improved efficiency, and informed decision-making. Technological integration yields a more connected and efficient supply chain, improved logistic

performance, and reduced operational costs. The customer-centric approach contributes to increased customer satisfaction, building loyalty and positive brand perception.

Discussion

The chapter delves into the multifaceted interaction between strategic management processes and the integration of digital technologies in logistics. It emphasizes the pivotal role of strategic decisions in shaping supply chain optimization, cost control, and technological integration. Each aspect is explored in-depth, showcasing real-world examples and illustrating the transformative impact of digitalization on logistics operations.

The discussion underscores the critical importance of strategic decision-making in achieving a cohesive and efficient supply chain. From determining supply chain strategies to selecting suppliers, managing inventory, optimizing logistics, and embracing technological innovations, strategic management emerges as the linchpin. The results are tangible – reduced operational costs, heightened customer satisfaction, and a more sustainable business model.

A comprehensive analysis of how strategic decisions influence the cost structure of logistics operations is presented. The chapter distinguishes between cost-focused and value-focused strategies, shedding light on budget management, cost analysis, efficiency improvement, and technological innovation. The implementation of cost control strategies yields benefits such as reduced operational costs, enhanced efficiency, and informed decision-making.

Technological integration emerges as a cornerstone in the discussion, emphasizing the strategic use of technology to enhance various logistics processes. From smart sensors and data analytics to automation, artificial intelligence, blockchain, and e-commerce integration, each technology is explored in the context of making operations faster, more precise, and customer-centric. The results are evident – a more connected and efficient supply chain, improved logistic performance, and reduced operational costs.

The chapter extends its exploration into the customer-centric dimension, showcasing how strategic management processes profoundly impact customer satisfaction. The emphasis on fast and reliable delivery services, effective inventory management, traceability, transparent information provision, well-designed customer communication, flexible return policies, and continuous improvement based on customer feedback, all contribute to an enhanced customer experience.

Implications and Future Directions:

The implications of this chapter extend to businesses seeking to navigate the complexities of the modern logistics landscape. By understanding the synergies between strategic management and digitalization, organizations can proactively adapt to market changes, enhance operational efficiency, and elevate customer satisfaction. Future directions may involve exploring emerging technologies, addressing evolving customer expectations, and navigating regulatory landscapes to ensure sustained success in an ever-changing business environment.

REFERENCE

- Akandere, G. (2021). Dijitalleşme Düzeyi ve Yeşil Lojistik Uygulamaların Lojistik Performansa Etkisi. Nevşehir Hacı Bektaş Veli Üniversitesi SBE Dergisi, 11(4), 1979-2000. doi: 10.30783/nevsosbilen.1022778
- Ceran, Y., Ortakarpuz, M., & Erkoçak, H. E. (2022). Uluslararası Stratejik Pazarlama Kararları ve Lojistik 4.0 Bağlamında Lojistik Maliyetler ile Karlılık İlişkisi. Avrupa Bilim ve Teknoloji Dergisi, (35), 102-110. Doi: 10.31590/ejosat.1058377
- Chao, Li., Wei, Feng., Shuihua, Han., Shivam, Gupta., Sachin, Gundurao, Kamble. (2022). Digital Adaptive Governance, Digital Transformation, and Service Quality in Logistics Enterprises. Journal of Global Information Management, doi: 10.4018/jgim.309377
- Cichosz, M. (2018). Digitalization and competitiveness in the logistics service industry. e-mentor, 77(5), 73-82. doi: 10.15219/EM77.1392
- Diófási-Kovács, O. (2021). Exploring Effects of Digitalization on Sustainability in the Logistics Service Industry. Editors Seung Ho Park, Maria Alejandra Gonzalez-Perez, Dinorá Eliete Floriani The Palgrave Handbook of Corporate Sustainability in the Digital Era, 455-478. doi: 10.1007/978-3-030-42412-1_23
- Fenton, A., Fletcher, G., & Griffiths, M. (Eds.). (2019). Strategic digital transformation: A results-driven approach. Routledge. doi: 10.4324/9780429020469
- Gündem, R., & Akatay, A. (2021). Lojistik Yetkinliklerinin Çalışan Performansına Etkisi: Üçüncü Parti Lojistik Sağlayıcıları Üzerine Bir Araştırma (Doctoral Dissertation, Selcuk University). Doi: 10.30976/susead.791711
- Gürcan, N. (2022). Strateji Kavramının ve Stratejik Yönetimin Yeni Yönelim ve Kullanım Alanları Üzerine Bir İnceleme. Stratejik ve Sosyal Araştırmalar Dergisi, 6(2), 333-348. doi: 10.30692/sisad.1066554
- Koldemir, B. (2020). A digital transformation in international transport and logistics: blockchain. Editor Gökçe Çiçek Ceyhun Handbook of research on the applications of international transportation and logistics for world trade (pp. 425-453). IGI Global. doi: 10.4018/978-1-7998-1397-2.CH023
- Liu, H., Islam, S. M., Liu, X., & Wang, J. (2020, November). Strategy-oriented digital transformation of logistics enterprises: the roles of artificial intelligence and blockchain. *5th international conference on innovative technologies in intelligent systems and industrial applications (CITISIA)* (pp. 1-5). IEEE. doi: 10.1109/CITISIA50690.2020.9371847

- Marzenna, Cichosz., Carl, Marcus, Wallenburg., A., Michael, Knemeyer. (2020). Digital transformation at logistics service providers: barriers, success factors and leading practices. *The International Journal of Logistics Management*, doi: 10.1108/IJLM-08-2019-0229
- Muhammad, Taufani., Anton, Wachidin, Widjaja. (2022). Digital transformation for enhancing LSP (Logistic Service Provider) performance. *Proceeding international conference on family business and entrepreneurship*. doi: 10.33021/icfbe.v2i1.3518
- Nur, Azaliah, Abu, Bakar. (2023). A Review of Enterprise Architecture for Strategic Performance Management in the Transportation Sector Digital Transformation. *Open international journal of informatics*, doi: 10.11113/oiji2023.11n1.245
- Oğan, E & Wolff, R. A. (2022). Fortune 500 işletmelerinin dijital dönüşüm performansında dijital kültürün aracılık rolü. *Fiscaoeconomia*, 6(3), 1282-1307. Doi: 10.25295/fsecon.1114853
- Özkan, T., & Raşit, Acar. (2022). Müşteri ve Bilgi Tabanlı Lojistik Yeteneklerin Covid-19 Salgını Sürecinde İşletme Performansına Etkisi: Türkiye Lojistik İşletmelerinde Bir Araştırma. *Kastamonu Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi*, 24(2), 391-408. doi: 10.21180/iibfdkastamonu.1093618
- Patro, C. S., & Raghunath, K. M. K. (2021). Digital transformation: Influence on business performance in competitive milieu. Editor Esakki, T., *Managerial issues in digital transformation of global modern corporations* (pp. 16-31). IGI Global. doi: 10.4018/978-1-7998-2402-2.CH002
- Reis, J., Amorim, M., Melão, N., & Matos, P. (2018). Digital transformation: a literature review and guidelines for future research. *Trends and Advances in Information Systems and Technologies: Volume 1* 6, 411-421. doi: 10.1007/978-3-319-77703-0_41
- Shrestha, M., & Kumar, R. (2022). Performance Management in Digital Transformation: A Strategy for Sustainability. In *Handbook of Research on Digital Transformation Management and Tools* (pp. 1-23). IGI Global. doi: 10.4018/978-1-7998-9764-4.ch001
- Sun, T. (2022, March). The Impact of Enterprise Digital Transformation on Innovation Performance. *8th International Conference on Information Management (ICIM)* (pp. 212-217). IEEE. doi: 10.1109/icim56520.2022.00046
- Tomaszewski, A. (2021). Can digital transformation be measured from a strategic perspective? Some evidence based on content analysis in the

- banking and clothing industries. *e-mentor*, 90(3), 53-63. doi: 10.15219/EM90.1522
- Vukšić, V. B., Ivančić, L., & Vugec, D. S. (2018). A preliminary literature review of digital transformation case studies. *International Journal of Computer and Information Engineering*, 12(9), 737-742. doi: 10.5281/ZENODO.1474581
- Xue, Yang., Langxuan, Pan., Ai, Dong, Song., Xiangqian, Ma., Juan-Li, Yang. (2023). Research on the strategy of knowledge sharing among logistics enterprises under the goal of digital transformation. *Heliyon*, doi: 10.1016/j.heliyon.2023.e15191
- Yangınlar, G., & Köksal, C. (2022). Radyo Frekansi Tanımlama (Rfid) Teknolojisinin Tedarik Zinciri Performansına Etkileri: Lojistik Endüstrisinde Bir Vaka Çalışması. *Verimlilik Dergisi*, 91-109. doi: 10.51551/verimlilik.989369

CHAPTER 13

RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN SCIENCE AND PHILOSOPHY- EVIDENCE FROM AVIATION INDUSTRY

ASSIT. PROF. DR. TUĞRUL GÜNAY¹

LEC. TAPDIQ IMANOV²

ASSOC. PROF. DR. MEHMET NECATI CIZRELIOĞULLARI³

Abstract

Philosophical ideas and assumptions have played an important role in the sciences and fundamental applied science has proposed theory and performed an experiment. Science is an intellectual activity carried systematic observation of natural occurrences, collection of data, and detection of fact to design new implementations, developments in technologies and progress in engineering. Philosophy investigates comprehensively the fundamental nature of existence, human and reality. Adequate clarification of the nexus between science and philosophy allows to understand philosophy of science better. Objective this study is to define an interrelation between philosophy and science, to precisely find formulation of the philosophy of science. There are meaningful relations between philosophy of science and engineering in aviation. Research in aeronautics has ensured the basis for practical developments in the design of aircraft, and enhancing aerodynamics which makes it possible to improve in airfoil and airframe design. Sir Isaac Newton and Bernoulli had made calculations of air flow on wings, and lift. The next major achievement in the history of aviation was in the creation of aircraft engines, based on the law of jet propulsion

¹ Cyprus Science University, Faculty of Tourism, Department of Tourism and Hotel Management, Kyrenia, TRNC, Orcid Numarasi: 0000-0001-5649-1775

E-mail: tugrugunay@csu.edu.tr

Cyprus Science University, Vocational School of Aviation, Civil Aviation Cabin Services, Kyrenia, TRNC, Orcid Number: 0000-0002-5667-5678

E-mail: tveyranimanov@csu.edu.tr

Mardin Artuklu University, Faculty of Tourism, Department of Tourism Guide, Mardin, Turkey, Orcid Number: 0000-0002-9884-6084

E-mail: cizrelioglu.necati@gmail.com

applying Newton's third law of motion, while improving aircraft performance and efficiency.

Keywords: Philosophy, Science, Aviation, Philosophy of science

Introduction

As science has existed for about three centuries, the period of ancient and medieval era, religious thoughts and prescription from the church has dominated in western philosophy that explained everything in the world (Hoque, 2023). Considering figuratively, science can be perceived as a human mind, and philosophy might be collated equally as a sensible to the human heart. Science, in general, concerns empirical studies which observe and experimentally validate, on the contrary, the philosophy explanation is actually based on the abstract.

Deliberation around philosophy and science have continued over the decades between scientist and humanitarian, arguing that epistemology of science overcomes the dialectical analysis of philosophy. Since science is a relies on empirical evidence seeking to obtain knowledge through observation, experimentation, and the development of testable theories based on factual data, while the philosophy use logical analysis and argumentation, which examines fundamental questions about the nature of reality, existence, knowledge, ethics, and the meaning of life based on causation (Smith, 2023).

Contemporary Science is a systematic study which connected with four tides, consisting of natural and applied sciences, as well as social and formal sciences. The basic sections of philosophy that uses thinking and reasoning to analyze problems related to epistemology, metaphysics, mind and language, value theory, logic, science and mathematics, and history of philosophy. Current activities which used, include reasoning and understanding the questions such as the nature of reality (metaphysics), rational thinking (logic), limits of our understanding (epistemology), moral good (ethics), the nature of beauty (aesthetics) etc., **Table 1.**

Table 1. Relation between Philosophy and Science

Parameters of Comparison	Philosophy	Science
Derived from	Greek word “Philosophia” meaning “love for wisdom”	Latin word “Scientia” meaning “knowledge”
Practitioners are known as	Philosophers	Scientists
Origin	Emerged from the basic search for knowledge	Originally a branch of philosophy, natural philosophy
Basic	Deals with logical analysis based on reason	Deals with hypothesis testing based on factual data
Related field	Thinking, reasoning, analysis	Observation, Experiment, Result,
Branches	Reality (metaphysics), Rational thinking (logic), Limits of our understanding (epistemology), Moral good (ethics), Nature of beauty (aesthetics)	Natural sciences, Social science, Formal sciences, Applied sciences.

The main question necessary for clarification, consist of, is there overlap and to what degree science and philosophy in their methods and sources of cognitions, however both fundamentally attempt to learn about the individuals and world (Metcalf, 2018). Philosophy is always found on the outcomes of the empirical sciences to form its theories and provisions. Hence science and philosophy move together and are not separable even though they are different. This validates the reason that explains why in the past, best philosophers were also scientists at the same time (Ene, 2023). Even though, historical, and close relationship between science and philosophy, the current scientific community somehow perceives philosophy different from science, even antagonistic. While Laplane et al. (2019) argued the contrary, explaining that philosophy might have significant efficient and productive influence on science. The offer by Fodor’s (1983) have set the framework of many empirical research and theories in terms of cognitive at different areas of science including, cognitive anthropology and its perfection, evolutionary psychology, artificial intelligence (AI) etc., concluding that, philosophy and science shares out with logic tools, analysis of conceptual matters, and strict argumentation (Kanwisher, 2000; Barrett and Kurzban, 2006). Conception perceiving "mind", "intellect", "conscious", "brains" and "emotion" are used in various fields of literature, meanwhile often their meanings do not match, having a disagreement. Though philosophy has contributed into science winnow of the problematic and aged assumptions which reached scientific

changes (Adolphs and Anderson, 2018). Development and construction of AI, psychological theories, mental state variables, and investigation of sense which requires conceptual tools, can be supplied precisely with philosophy.

Philosophy—is the systematized study of general and fundamental questions, as represented at Ancient Greek letter PHI (phi) (Figure 1), which can expand and advance scientific activities in all stages of development, beginning of theory and to experiment.



Figure 1. PHI-philosophy letter. Source: Wiebke Bretting (artist).

The sciences studying the life style, by using philosophical approach and thinking has reached an important results on the matters of diverse as, evolutionary altruism (Sober and Wilson, 1998), and disputes over unit of selection (Okasha, 2006), building of a “tree of life” (Koonin, 2011), predominance of microbes in the biosphere, the classification of the gene, and the crucial examination of the innateness concept (Mameli and Bateson, 2006). Similarly fundamental queries in physics, such as designation accuracy of time, study of temporary irreversibility by Huw Price (1996) and closed temporary curves by David Lewis (1976) also reached by the work conducted of philosophers, which helped dissipate conceptual confusion in physics (Rovelli, 2018). There is no direct explanation and definitively clear answer to, how does science without philosophy? Either no a philosophers, nor scientists and philosophers of science did not genuinely answer this historical question. Rigorous consequential to bear in mind that the science took its origin across philosophy thinking, uprising back from Plato, Aristotle and outstanding Galileo, founders of development modern science (Lvory, 2022). Philosophy ensures a conceptual interpretation of scientific knowledge to define its significance and aim of installation. In contrast common scientific thinking, the philosophical basis of science consist of different ramification sections of philosophy sections such as, anthropology, theology, ontology, axiology and praxeology (Lebedev, 2018), thus substantiating the fact that science simply cannot do without philosophy (Khun, 1962). Importance of the philosophy for science is reflected in their mutual synergy effect with the science, indicating how philosophy is useful for science (De Haro, 2020) and

apart from that not only an integral part of science but also, contributes to advancing all areas of science from theory to experiment. Kuhn (1962) argues that advancement in science is not a linear process based on theoretical formula and experimental validation of the fact or confutation of given hypothesis scientific theories. However it is the result of revolution and variation in paradigm in science. Researchers studying in various paradigms may have disagreement in opinion, concerning discussions about which is a better theory and an excellent interpretation or what is meant to perceive the problem, as it was between Einstein and Bohr (Rosenfeld, 1963). In other words, there is a broad scope of ontological, epistemic, and ethical prerequisite applicable for any existing paradigm (Artigas, 1999). In addition, the paradigms offer significant targets for open questions of the theory and in such cases philosophy also, has a key role to discover new scientific theories (de Regt 2004). The primary goal of philosophy aims to study knowledge which attempts to investigate the base of convictions, prejudices, and beliefs of humans, as well as the environment and unknown phenomena. As soon as the phenomena is revealed, and the essence becomes definitive, this subject ceases to be part of philosophy, and immediately belongs to separate science. The study of the heavens once belonged to philosophy, now includes astronomy as grand work of Newton's which is called "the mathematical principles of natural philosophy". Similarly, the examination of the human brain and mind, which concerned philosophy, currently belongs to the science of psychology, which has now been separated from philosophy. Therefore, uncertainty of the philosophy is mostly apparent then reality. Set of questions which is modern science able to definitively answer completely separated from philosophic knowledge, the residual which is unanswered remains under philosophy explanations (Russell, 1912). Aristotle is a young philosopher, who was a beginner in the area of physics and biologist. Plato was engaged physicist, whose cosmology concerned to the theoretical part of physics, Descartes and Leibniz partially dedicated study on physics, while biology and physics in that time called a natural philosophy before the XIX century. Plato, Descartes, and Leibniz have reached certain knowledge in the area of mathematicians, and likewise these philosophers, Locke, Berkeley, Hume, and Kant worked substantially as a psychologists. The named outstanding luminaries, which nowadays reversed as magnificent philosophers and scientists, always were in searching a conceptions of reality.

Philosophy and Aviation

In spite of perceiving philosophy and aviation as completely different areas of science, in reality they are interrelated with various concepts. Unlike the purpose

of the philosophy by means of the theory, aviation is the science of designing, building of aircrafts and airspace vehicles, complex operation and maintenance, as well as navigation of routes across the midair. There is exploration which attempts to find out several aspects of relation between philosophy and aviation. Mainly and most of the important philosophical concepts employed into the aviation industry are human behavior, knowledge of aircraft flight operation and understanding the dynamic of developing new technologies which consist of a combination of three philosophical terminologies (behavior, knowledge and understanding), (Bostrom and Sandberg, 2009). Aviation significantly performs the scientific principles and empirical data in order to provide efficient control of aircraft and flight safety. Design personnel, maintenance engineers and flight crew members need to perfectly understand the laws of physics, aerodynamics, thermodynamics, and relevant scientific fields to ensure successful operation of the aircraft. The mentioned concepts of aviation connected to epistemology, which examines knowledge and justification. Epistemology studies are based on the perception of knowledge and justified beliefs, allowing to distinguish between true and false validations (Truncellito, 2023). Risk and Uncertainty (Hansson, 2004) are always associated with aviation in terms of the philosophical concept which is also crucial in such fields as finance, healthcare, and environmental policy (Hansson, 2012). These ideas that are involved in aviation, can have an impact on safety of flight, hence passenger and pilots. Taking into account the philosophy of risk and uncertainty, aviation sociological and psychological experts evaluates the situations, investigating to make proper decision to balance the risk and safety. Back beyond, ethic is existed in a period of Newtonian world, however dominating ethical theories remains focus on deterministic problems (Hansson 2003). In aviation is also arises, somehow exist an ethical norms and questions, which is associated to moral philosophy. From the point of view ethic norms aviation assumes fairness distribution of justice, and responsibility. Companies involved within the aviation industries as well as aviation authorities and regulatory organizations are responsible for support the balance of interests various stakeholders, such as employees, passengers, shareholders, and the whole society. All these aspects interrelated with the philosophy of ethics, which helps set up ethical principles, determinants our behavior. Finally, main important factor of the aviation development connects with the philosophy of technology. The technology is expands thanks to theories of philosophers, which over course of many years investigated impact of existing hypothesis on human behavior and perceiving global industrial changes. The Industrial Revolution was a time of scientific and technological progresses in the beginning of 1750 that transformed away from agriculture and started cultural and economic growth thanks to the

introduction of new technologies and industrial machines. Even though a several innovations has been created at the 18th century the Industrial Revolution has begun intensive grew in the middle of 19th century and soon spread over of the world, especially in Europe and North America particularly in the United Kingdom (Weightman, 2010; Allen, 2017). In the wake of the industrial revolution in the UK and Europe, followed by the great French revolution, resulted in the fall of the monarchy in 1789, which is an important date and fact of history. Louis 16th has got a country with a full economically destroyed and disappointed population, consequently faced highly tax loads. The generated idea of liberalizations, accepted by these philosophers Locke, Voltaire, Montesquieu and Rousseau, in addition to these the economists Quesnay and Adam Smith contributed to the goals of revolution and ideologically to the great transformation after revolution in 1789 (Maior, 1966; De Mattos, 2012).

The aviation industry started its maturity at the beginning of the 20th century, rapidly assuming a key position in the design of flying machines contributing to the quick development of aviation technology and economic growth. Engineers introduced the initial design of new airships examining its reliability and safety (Prencipe, 2010). Alberto Santos-Dumont, Brazilian originated, with most aviation pioneers, meanwhile lived in France, designing and flew airships and delta planes at the beginning of the 20th century. The airship number 3 (Figure 2), developed by Santos-Dumont, was a masterpiece that time, however it was similar and partially based on an earlier project by Tissandier brothers (De Mattos, 2012). Hereafter, Albert and Gaston Tissandier, French brothers, demonstrated first electric powered flight by attaching an electric motor to an airship in 1881 and two years after they modeled larger electric aircraft (Figure 2) which performed it first flight in 8 October 1883 (Santos-Dumont, 1904).

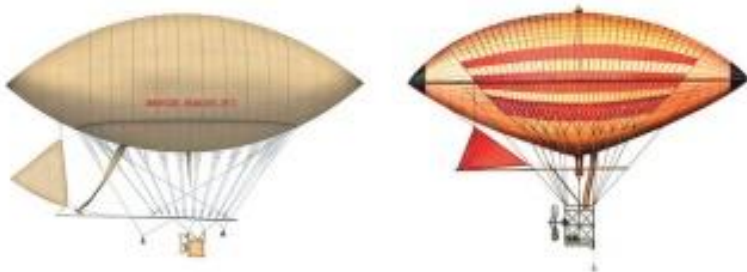


Figure 2. Santos-Dumont number 3 (left) and Tissandier brother's the electric-powered (right) airships. Source: (Library of Congress, 2023)

Unlike in France, quite a competitive field has been established in the USA, around the aviation sector for design of flying devices. Being American astronomer, physicist, inventor of the bolometer, designer on aeronautics Samuel Langley worked on the project attempting to create piloted heavier-than-air aircraft (Schmitt, 1990). Later he was informed about the Wright brother's success concerning their glider concept in 1902, he tried to connect to them, and however the brother's gently refused his intention.

The Wright brothers, United States' aviation founders, developed the idea for inventing flying machines that create and build the first world's successful engine powered airplane in December 1903 (Johnson, 2001). **Figure 3.**



Figure 3. First flight, December 17, 1903 (120 feet in 12 seconds, 10:35 a.m.; Kitty Hawk, North Carolina). Source: (Library of Congress, 2023)

The history of the great aviation industry begins its development implementing automated aircraft control with fixed wings, going back to the founding of Boeing company in 1916 and Mc. Douglas in 1920 accordingly (Winship, 1998). The Dynamic growth of innovative processes covering the aviation industry can be recognized as a third industrial revolution concerning different fields of manufacturing aircraft parts, electronic equipment and devices. Therefore, the philosophy of technology has impacted considerable changes in aviation and contributed to study the risks and advantages of technologies, creating modern aircraft control systems that align with values and goals. However, in spite of the excessive development of aviation, it still has a negative impact on the environment, air pollution and climate change.

The description of creation of lift applying aerodynamic airfoil is correct and precise, and if figure it out in detail, explaining of the law proposed by Bernoulli show faulty is relating to how airfoil is generate lift, and why the Newton's law is necessary to be used instead, yet both approaches are true in all situations. (Eastlake, 2002). Presently, its frequently asked question: "What is the force which contributes to lift and fly an airplane in the air"? Often the answer gets misleading and wrong. If refer to Newton's law the lift is easier to understand rather than by Bernoulli law (Anderson and Eberhardt, 1999). The Popular

Explanation of the Bernoulli principle is based on its simplicity, taking into account that it used to describe lift which is associated configuration of the wing. According to the principle, upon aircraft movement across the air, its wings affect changing the air velocity and pressure around object. Differences in pressure and speed are results in the upward force, that cause lift (NASA, 2010), **Figure 4**.

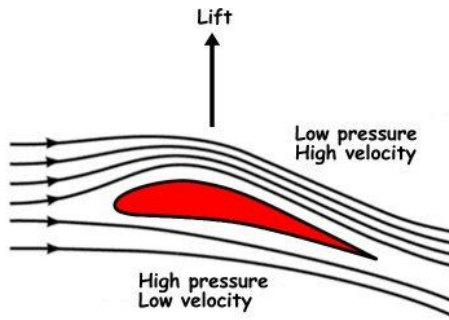


Figure 4. Theory of lift generation according to Bernoulli Law. Source: (Ken, 2022).

The mystery, why is flying possible in the air by applying wings, has been a problem for a long time to explain on behalf of mathematical sciences, however the secret was to define how large it is to create the ratio lift and drag. Newton's 3rd law stated that, to provide a lift, necessary airflow downwash with a small drag, by the wing redirecting air downwards (Hoffman and Johnson, 2009). French philosopher, achieved fame as a mathematician and scientist D'Alembert has put own paradox, about zero lift/drag ratio with non-vortex flow, named Potential Flow, mathematically, defines the gradient of a harmonic function satisfied by Laplace's equation. The hypothesis emphasizes physics, however it has not neither lift nor drag, against all physical laws, which showed to be without physical relevance. The unsuccessful paradox was solved in 1903 when Wright brothers has demonstrated the ability of human flight on the heavier-than-air, in fact was feasible in practice, even if mathematically it was impossible (Stewartson, 1981; Hoffman and Johnson, 2010). So, Bernoulli and/or Newton?-this is a complex question to whom to give a preference, however there are two theoretical phenomena, which are going on simultaneously when (aerodynamic) airfoil generates lift. Bernoulli's law describes the airfoil pressure difference between upper and lower surface of the object. Newton's laws suggest that changes in the airfoil momentum by the forces acting on the moving airflow generate a lift. In addition, Bernoulli founded fluid physics law, but Newton's

laws are simpler, that does not need to evaluate the details of the flow field. Finally, Bernoulli is indeed father of aerodynamics and deserves it. (Eastlake, 2002).

Science and Aviation

In order to assess the magnitude of science in the area of aviation history it's necessary to add the function of engineering in the development of the aviation industry. Science can be defined as a collection of knowledge accumulation about processes of physical phenomena, gathering of factual data, classification of basic principles and fundamental laws and engineering as application of use for achieving intended goals. Scientific research is carrying out a purpose to get final results for specific aims and ideas that will apply. In many cases engineering has the function of the scientist, to fix gaps in the theoretical background or the body of available data (Rae, 1961). Scientific development of aviation started with George Cayley by the end of 18th century as a founder of modern aeronautics and air navigation (Wragg, 1974), as well as scientific aerial investigator, applied basic aerodynamics principles of forces, studying stability of flying devices (Flyingmachines.org, 2023). By implementing and using the test stand has been performed to investigate performance of flight, using early recognised vectors of forces (weight, lift, thrust, drag) determining fly stability along the three axes underlying by aerodynamics principles. In addition, the important design concept has been projected tension spoked with light and strong wheel for aircraft Landing Gear (LG). Progress in Cayley's invention and success results made it necessary and at the same time contributed by the creation of a specific industry dedicated to theoretical studies and practical experimentations. Establishment of various facilities on the basis of scientific research institutions for the aviation industry, has served the formation field of Aeronautics. Aeronautics is a great area of the science involved with the development and designing of an airplane or other flying machines as well as study of the science of flight (McCormick, 1995). The existing basic areas and the relevant department of aeronautics are the studies aviation, aerospace engineering, aerodynamics and rocketry. Therefore multi-functionality deals with their techniques of operations within the atmosphere, operation of the systems, predicting and control of the forces and moments that interact with objects in motion, such as an aircraft (Martinez-Val and Perez, 2009). The design process is longer and the same time a major parts of the aeronautical sciences which is very important to apply, taking into account the four basis of aeronautical engineering that includes, aerodynamics, propulsions, material and structures and stability-control (NASA, 2023). Development of both aeronautics and astronautics are multidisciplinary by

character, thus requiring implementation of many specific scientific disciplines. In this context, to evaluate the relationship between Technology and Science as well Science and Engineering need to clarify the question of the terms of "Relationship" and "Technology and Engineering". Actually this is an essentially philosophical question, however the philosophical concerns of governments as they distributors financial resources for scientific research and technological development has become increasingly important (Rae, 1961; Gardner, 1994). The science involved in technology acting as independently and attempts to assembling the architecture of new generation jet transportation system (Applegate and Graeber, 2005), whilst the engineering of these vehicles investigates internal processing of the interaction between the computing and automation of the system, testing the vehicle's behavior, taking into account human factors, which study is spans over two decades (Hollnagel, 1993). According to epistemological position Rogers, technology depends on science, and thus the acquisition of scientific knowledge has an impact on the development of technological feasibility, nevertheless the scientific knowledge is more valuable than technological skills (Gardner, 1994). As the twentieth century rolled around, and future progress in aviation invented powered engines with internal combustion as a main component for aircraft, which has modified basic aerodynamics, and body of experimental data, with a potentially reasonably low weight-to-power ratio thanks to science and technology as well as with best engineering ideas. In point of view science the aerodynamics is a determination factor of aeronautics, because of defines the shape, dimensions and specification of aircraft, wingspan, structure of fuselage and empennage able to compute power and performance gradually for its optimization and automations (Jupp, 2001)

Much of the ideology behind automation and optimization has been investigated around aircraft systems, including ergonomics knowledge about the promises and problems in the aviation domain. Really there is cause of concern that automation has been implicated in a number of fatal aviation accidents (Stanton and Marsden, 1996). Root case of the investigations of these accidents has specified psychological factors such as inattention, cognitive strain and mental stress, with high workload, failure of systems and human factors particularly pilots dissatisfaction (Young and Stanton, 2002). During a usual and critical situation, all of these factors might aggregately interact and have consequences as an influence of flight safety. Optimization of ergonomics is one of the priority design functions to ensure that avoids these problems while maximizing the benefits (Young et al., 2007). Boeing and Airbus, currently two major aircraft manufacturers in providing demand for the world aviation industry, however both have developed their own different design philosophy, namely soft

automation (Boeing) and hard automation (Airbus). Airbus, in its fly-by-wire aircraft uses hard automation philosophy which restrict authority of pilots over the aircraft flight control systems, wise versa Boeing applying soft concept automation allowing pilots to act as their preferences (Hughes and Dornheim, 1995; Harris, 2011).The design philosophy of the flight crew cabin is an important component of aircraft to ensure the safety of the pilot from the point of view of relieving the pilot from the negative psychological state. Design of Airbus aircraft cabin with remote control performed according to set of rules which dictates the operational philosophy while minimizing the risks of overstressing simplifying the pilot's task by enhancing situational and system awareness, **Figure 5**.



Figure 5. Airbus A380 flight deck design concept. Source: (Airbus.com, 2023)

Ergonomic environment fosters enhancing inter-pilot communication, considering human factor mistakes and potential practical error. A proper perceiving of automation design philosophy, has made it capable to fix various kinds of errors on the flight deck during critical phases of flight. Upon growth of knowledge and adaptation with modern automated crew cabin environments, confidence is increased, while decreasing workload, thus gaining advantage ensuring flight safety (Andre, 1999).

The new flight deck concept suggested by Boeing has introduced new technologies allowing crew members to work more efficiently and safely. Initial stage of development process of new cabin design main focus aimed solution of

safety issue with balancing innovations and enhancing operational performance differing from previous Boeing flight decks, **Figure 6**.



Figure 6. Boeing 787 flight deck design concept. Source: (Boeing.com, 2023)

Essential advanced features of cabin design consist of application and integration of dual global positioning system (GPS) receivers with triple-redundant flight management systems. This approach ensures simplified flight crew landing procedures by capability using the integrated concept navigation introduced on the Next-Generation aircrafts. Installed the dual head-up displays (HUDs), offers the capability to reliably perform required navigation performance (RNP) procedures far into the future, improving operational efficiency (Neville and Dey, 2012).

Looking at both manufacturer cabin designs the crew cabins for Boeing and Airbus aircrafts, at first glance seems quite similar, under current design production. The electronic displays, engine and flight control system levers are installed at the same positions, and distance as well as in compliance with the angle from the Eye Datum Point for several devices. However, the first and main visually detected difference between two design groups for the crew cabin is the vertical fitting of a Control Column on the Boeing aircraft between crew seats and dashboard panel, as contrary of the Airbus which Side Sticks are installed. Specifically, the flight deck ordinary design differences, having just relation changes in Control Column-Side Stick, hidden the principal design philosophy of the two manufacturers.

Conclusion

Utterance of philosophical ideas and assumptions, from the ancient time period, has played an important role in the sciences involving studying human

activities and lives in biology and sociology, alike fundamental questions in physics and chemistry, offering theory and performing experiments. Although, both use common logical tools, conceptual knowledge, applied analysis and strong argumentations. Having significant scientific experience and knowledge, philosophers nowadays can efficiently contribute to the development of science at a wide range. Objective this study was attempts to find an appropriate interrelation between philosophy and science, which is the start point undertaken from the philosophy of science. In order to go forward the overview has been introduced, to understand what philosophy is and what science is, separately. Adequate clarification of the nexus between science and philosophy allowed us to understand philosophy of science better.

Science is systematic observation of natural occurrences, collection of data, and detection of fact in order to set up laws and principles based on obtained information. Be engaged in science, that is consistent regularity performing the validation of accumulated facts and obtained results or tested by further investigation. Science is in fact an intellectual activity carried on by humans that is designed to discover new implementations in different areas of the industry, and developments in technologies and progress in engineering.

Philosophy investigates comprehensively the fundamental nature of existence, human and reality. The topics which philosophy is addressed concern to various areas such as:

- Metaphysics (the theory of reality).
- Epistemology (the theory of knowledge)
- Ethics (the theory of moral values)
- Politics (the theory of legal rights and government)
- Aesthetics (the theory of the nature of art)

Actually, nowadays sciences get started with philosophical studies and the scientific models of experimentation and proof, which requires integration of reality (metaphysics) and humanity (epistemology, ethics, politics, and aesthetics) (Kelley, 2010).

Philosophy of science is an old discipline that stated by Both Plato and Aristotle wrote on this matter and some of the pre-Socratics did also. Taking into account two meanings philosophy and science, it can be interpreted that, philosophy of science wishes to describe and understand action of science within a widespread of sciences, for formulation of worldviews, as well as to elaborate the broader contribution of science. On the other hand philosophy of science is a discipline in which the concepts and theories of the sciences are analysed and clarified and critically reflects on the very discipline of science itself (Losee, 2001).

The relationship between science and philosophy often has been disputable. With the industrial revolution during the 16th and 17th centuries in many places in the Western world, science became a modern way of thinking. Progress in science, although earlier they both existed together, and due to continuous inventions of Francis Bacon, Galileo Galilei and Isaac Newton, Bernoulli which thought of themselves as philosophers but were in fact scientists as well. Referring to physicist Steven Weinberg (1992) written essay “Against Philosophy” he argued that philosophy is not useful to science which was supported by many scientists in the early 20th century, beginning with Einstein. However, currently there are many areas where the two disciplines can operate largely independently of each other.

There are meaningful relations between philosophy of science and engineering in aviation. Research in aeronautics has ensured the basis for practical developments in the design of aircraft, and enhancing aerodynamics which makes it possible to improve in airfoil and airframe design. Sir Isaac Newton and Bernoulli had made calculations of air flow on wings, and lift. The next major achievement in the history of aviation was in the creation of aircraft engines, based on the law of jet propulsion applying Newton's third law of motion, while improving aircraft performance and efficiency.

References:

- Adolphs, R., & Anderson, D. J. (2018). *The neuroscience of emotion: A New Synthesis*. Princeton University Press. (Google Scholar)
- Allen, R. C. (2017). *The industrial revolution: A very short introduction* (Vol. 509). Oxford University Press.
- Anderson, D., & Eberhardt, S. (1999). *How airplanes fly: A physical description of lift*. Sport Aviation.
- Andre, L. (1999). *Understanding Design Philosophy Can Help Pilots Benefit from Modern Automated Flight Systems*, presented at the 4th Global Flight Safety and Human Factors Symposium at Santiago, Chile. The ICAO symposium took place in April 1999.
- Applegate, J.D. and Graeber, R.C. (2005) 'Integrated system safety design and human factors considerations for jet transport aeroplanes', in Harris, D. and Muir, H.C. (Eds.): *Contemporary Issues in Human Factors and Aviation Safety*, Ashgate, Aldershot, pp.3–24.
- Artigas, M. (1999). *The mind of the universe: Understanding science and religion*. Templeton Foundation Press.
- Barrett, H. C., & Kurzban, R. (2006). Modularity in cognition: framing the debate. *Psychological review*, 113(3), 628.
- Bostrom, N., & Sandberg, A. (2009). *The Wisdom of Nature: An Evolutionary Heuristic for Human Enhancement*. In *Human Enhancement* (pp. 375-416). Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- De Haro, S. (2020). Science and philosophy: A love–hate relationship. *Foundations of Science*, 25(2), 297-314.
- De Mattos, B, S. (2012). *Open Source Philosophy and the Dawn of Aviation*, J. Aersp. Technol. Manag., São José dos Campos, Vol.4, No 3, pp. 355-379, doi:10.5028/jatm.2012.04030812
- De Regt, H. W. (2004). Discussion note: Making sense of understanding. *Philosophy of Science*, 71(1), 98-109.
- Eastlake, Ch. N. (2002). An aerodynamicist's view of Lift, Bernoulli, and Newton. *The Physics Teacher*, 40(3), 166–173. doi:10.1119/1.1466553
- Ene, P. (2023). *Relationship between Philosophy and Science*, Available at: <https://www.walyben.com/relationship-between-philosophy-and-science/>, Accessed 09.04.2023
- Flyingmachines. (2023). *Sir George Cayley*, Available at: <https://web.archive.org/web/20090211164945/http://flyingmachines.org/cayl.html>, Accessed 14.04.2023
- Fodor, J. A. (1983). *The modularity of mind: An essay on faculty psychology* Cambridge. Mass.: MIT Press. [Google Scholar].

- Gardner, P. L. (1994). The Relationship between Technology and Science: Some Historical and Philosophical Reflections. *International Journal of Technology and Design Education* 4, 123-153, Kluwer Academic Publishers, Printed in the Netherlands.
- Hansson, S. O. (2003). "Ethical Criteria of Risk Acceptance." *Erkenntnis* 59 (2003): 291-309
- Hansson, S. O. (2004). Philosophical perspectives on risk. *Techné: Research in Philosophy and Technology*, 8(1), 10-35.
- Hansson, S. O. (2012). A panorama of the philosophy of risk. In: *Handbook of Risk Theory: Epistemology, Decision Theory, Ethics, and Social Implications of Risk*, Springer Netherlands, 2012, p. 27-54, https://doi.org/10.1007/978-94-007-1433-5_2
- Harris, D. (2001) *Human Performance on the Flight Deck*. London: CRC Press
- Hoffman, J., & Johnson, C. (2009). The mathematical secret of flight. *Normat*, 57(4), 1-25.
- Hoffman, J., & Johnson, C. (2010). Resolution of d'Alembert's paradox. *Journal of mathematical fluid mechanics*, 12, 321-334.
- Hollnagel, E. (1993) *Context and Control*, Academic Press, New York.
- Hoque, E. (2023). Relation between Philosophy and Science, Available at: <https://educerecentre.com/relation-between-philosophy-and-science/>, Accessed 14.04.2023
- Hughes, D. and Dornheim, M.A. (1995) 'Accidents direct focus on cockpit automation', *Aviation Week and Space Technology*, January 30, Vol. 142, No. 5, pp.52-54.
- Johnson, M. A. (2001). "On the Aviation Trail in the Wright Brothers' West Side Neighborhood in Dayton, Ohio". *Following the Footsteps of the Wright Brothers: Their Sites and Stories* 3. Wright State University. Available at: <https://corescholar.libraries.wright.edu/following/symposium/program/3>, Accessed 12.04.2023
- Jupp, J. (2011). Wing aerodynamics and the science of compromise. *Aeronaut. J.*, 105, 6
- Kanwisher, N. (2000). Domain specificity in face perception. *Nature neuroscience*, 3(8), 759-763.
- Ken. (2022). What Makes Airplanes Fly? Available at: <https://proaviationtips.com/what-makes-airplanes-fly/>, Accessed 12.04.2023
- Kelley, D. (2010). What is philosophy, Available at: <https://www.atlassociety.org/post/what-is-philosophy>, Accessed 16.04.2023

- Koonin, E. V. (2011). *The logic of chance: the nature and origin of biological evolution*. (FT press, Upper Saddle River, NJ), 1st Ed.
- Kuhn, T. S. (1962). *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*. Chicago (University of Chicago Press)
- Laplaine, L., Mantovani, P., Adolphs, R., Chang, H., Mantovani, A., McFall-Ngai, M., & Pradeu, T. (2019). Why science needs philosophy. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, 116(10), 3948-3952. <https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1900357116>
- Lebedev, S. (2018). "Philosophical Foundations of Science: Their structure and functions," *Proceedings of the International Conference on Contemporary Education, Social Sciences and Ecological Studies (CESSSES 2018)* [Preprint]. Available at: <https://doi.org/10.2991/cesses-18.2018.188>.
- Lewis, D. (1976). The paradoxes of time travel. Reprinted in his 1987 *Philosophical Papers*, vol. II, 67-80.
- Library of Congress. (2023). Tissandier collection and Wright Brothers Negatives, Available at: <https://www.loc.gov/pictures/?>, Accessed 12.04.2023.
- Losee, J. (2001). *A Historical Introduction to the Philosophy of Science*. 4th ed. Oxford England; New York: Oxford University Press.
- Lvory, R. (2022). *Philosophy of Science 101: The Relationship between Philosophy and Science*, Available at: <https://www.byarcadia.org/post/philosophy-of-science-101-an-introduction>, Accessed 10.04.2023
- Maior, A. S., 1966, "História Geral", Cia. Editora Nacional, 4th Edition, São Paulo, 498 p.
- Mameli, M., & Bateson, P. (2006). Innateness and the sciences. *Biology and Philosophy*, 21, 155-188.
- Martinez-Val, R; Perez, E (2009). Aeronautics and astronautics: recent progress and future trends, 223(12), 2767–2820. doi:10.1243/09544062jmes1546
- McCormick, B.W. (1995). *Aerodynamics, aeronautics and flight mechanics*, 2nd edition, 1995 (John Wiley, New York, USA).
- Metcalf, T. (2018). *Philosophy and Its Contrast with Science: Comparing Philosophical and Scientific Understanding*. Available at: <https://1000wordphilosophy.com/2018/02/13/philosophy-and-its-contrast-with-science/>, Accessed 09.04.2023
- NASA. (2010). *Principles of flight: Bernoulli's Principle*, EP-2010-12-474-HQ/ Available at: https://www.nasa.gov/sites/default/files/atoms/files/bernoulli_principle_k-4.pdf, Accessed 12.04.2023

- Neville, R. and Dey, M. (2012). Innovative 787 Flight Deck Designed for Efficiency, Comfort, and Commonality, Available at: https://www.boeing.com/commercial/aeromagazine/articles/2012_q1/pdfs/AERO_2012q1_article3.pdf, Accessed 15.04.2023
- Okasha, S. (2006). Evolution and the levels of selection. (Oxford Univ Press https://www.nasa.gov/sites/default/files/atoms/files/bernoulli_principle_k-4.pdf, London).
- Price, H. (1996). *Time's Arrow and Archimede's Point: Philosophical Reflections on Time and Physics*. Oxford University Press, London
- Prenciple, A. (2010). Aircraft and the Third Industrial Revolution. Sixth International Colloquium in Business History 2006. Has there been a third industrial revolution in global business? Bocconi University, Milan 16-18 November 2006, <https://www.researchgate.net/publication/286941852>
- Quine, W. V. O. (1979). Has philosophy lost contact with people? *Long Island Newsday*, 18.
- Rae, J. B. (1961). Science and Engineering in the History of Aviation. *Technology and Culture*, 2(4), 391–399. doi:10.2307/3100894
- Rosenfeld, L. (1963). The Epistemological Conflict between Einstein and Bohr, *Philosophy Today*. Volume 7, Issue 1, Pages 74-77, <https://doi.org/10.5840/philtoday19637115>
- Rovelli, C. (2018). Physics needs philosophy. Philosophy needs physics. *Foundations of Physics*, 48(5), 481-491.
- Russell, B. (1912). *The Problems of Philosophy*. Vol. 21, No. 84 (Oct., 1912), pp. 556-564 (9 pages), published By: Oxford University Press
- Santos-Dumont, A. (1904). *My airships - The history of my life*, Grand Richards, London, p.328
- Smith, E. (2023). Difference between Science and Philosophy, Available at: <https://askanydifference.com/difference-between-science-and-philosophy/>, Accessed 14.04.2023
- Sober, E., & Wilson, D. S. (1998). *Unto others: The evolution and psychology of unselfish behavior* (No. 218). Harvard university press, Cambridge, MA).
- Stanton, N.A. and Marsden, P. (1996) 'From fly-by-wire to drive-by-wire: safety implications of automation in vehicles', *Safety Science*, Vol. 24, No. 1, pp.35–49.
- Stewartson, K. (1981). D'Alembert's paradox. *SIAM review*, 23(3), 308-343.
- Truncellito, A. D. (2023). Internet Encyclopedia of Philosophy, Available at: <https://iep.utm.edu/epistemo/>, Accessed 11.04.2023
- Weightman, G. (2010). *The Industrial Revolutionaries: The Making of the Modern World, 1776–1914*. Open Road+ Grove/Atlantic.

- Weinberg, S. (1992). "Against Philosophy" (from "Dreams of a Final Theory"), Available at: <https://joelvelasco.net/teaching/167win10/Weinberg%20against%20philosophy.pdf>, Accessed 17.04.2023
- Winship, W. (1998) Boeing & Douglas: A history of Customer Service, www.boeing.com/commercial/aeromagazine/aero_01/ps/ps01/index.html, Aero, Boeing Magazine, 1. 9 July 2002
- Wragg, D.W. (1974). Flight before flying. Osprey. ISBN 978-0850451658.
- Young, M.S. and Stanton, N.A. (2002) 'Malleable attentional resources theory: a new explanation for the effects of mental underload on performance', Human Factors, Vol. 44, No. 3, pp.365–375
- Young, M. S., Stanton, N. A., & Harris, D. (2007). Driving automation: learning from aviation about design philosophies. International Journal of Vehicle Design, 45(3), 323-338.

CHAPTER 14

ON PSYCHOLOGISM IN PUSHKIN'S "THE MISERLY KNIGHT" AND HONORÉ DE BALZAC'S "GOBSEK": A COMPARATIVE ASPECT

Ali AKYAR¹

I would like to express my gratitude to my advisor Prof. Dr. Bahar Güneş for her support in my article.

Abstract

The article considers the works of A. Pushkin and O. Balzac in a comparative-typological aspect. Similarities and differences in the treatment of characters, types of psychologism, peculiarities of architectonics of the texts of two national literatures are traced. Particular attention is paid to the inner behaviour of the personality, which is explicated in external manifestations, the connection of the genre structure with the recreated socio-cultural situation is emphasised. An important place is given to the methods of cyclisation, the place of "The Miserly Knight" in the artistic integrity of the cycle, the development of dramaturgical techniques, dynamic plot structure. No less important is the epic structure of Balzac's narrative, the role of descriptive and dramatic elements in it, the saturation of action dynamics.

The cycle, created by A. S. Pushkin in the 1830s, at first did not have an exact name. The artist called the cycle in different ways: "Dramatic Scenes", "Dramatic Essays", "Dramatic Studies" and, finally, "Experience of Dramatic Studies". The title "Little Tragedies" was formulated, as is known, by literary scholars Pushkinists.

Balzac also for a long time looking for a common name for the cycle of his works and more than once gave the stories unifying their name ("Scenes of Private Life", "Scenes of Parisian Life", "Scenes of Provincial Life", "Social Sketches", etc.). However, reading Dante's "Divine Comedy" prompted another title - "The Human Comedy".

¹ Ardahan Üniversitesi, İnsani Bilimler ve Edebiyat Fakültesi, Rus Dili ve Edebiyatı Bölümü
aliakyar@ardahan.edu.tr, <https://orcid.org/0000-0002-1134-4285>

One of the most important problems in A.S. Pushkin's cycles and in O. Balzac's is the representation of contradictory characters: fragmented and integral, static and dynamic, etc. Pushkin's concept of human character matured in connection with his observations on the works of Western European literature, in particular the dramas of Shakespeare and Moliere.

Key words: inner world, psychologism, concept of personality, tragedy, literary cycle

О Психологизме в «Скупом рыцаре» А. С. Пушкина и «Гобсеке» Оноре де Бальзака: Компаративный аспект

Аннотация

В статье в сравнительно-типологическом аспекте рассмотрены произведения А. Пушкина и О. Бальзака. Прослежены сходства и различия в трактовке персонажей, типы психологизма, особенности архитектоники текстов двух национальных литератур. Особое внимание уделено внутреннему поведению личности, которое эксплицируется во внешних проявлениях, акцентирована связь жанровой структуры с воссоздаваемой социокультурной ситуацией. Важное место уделено приемам циклизации, месту «Скупого рыцаря» в художественной целостности цикла, разработке драматургических приемов, динамичной сюжетной структуры. Не менее важной является эпическая структура бальзаковского повествования, роль в нем описательного и драматического элементов, насыщенность динамикой действия.

Цикл, созданный А. С. Пушкиным в 1830-е годы, вначале не имел точного названия. Художник называл цикл по-разному: «Драматические сцены», «Драматические очерки», «Драматические изучения» и, наконец, «Опыт драматических изучений». Название «Маленькие трагедии» сформулировали, как известно, литературоведы-пушкинисты.

Бальзак также долгое время искал общее название для цикла своих произведений и не раз давал рассказам объединяющее их наименование («Сцены частной жизни», «Сцены парижской жизни», «Сцены провинциальной жизни», «Социальные этюды» и др.). Однако чтение «Божественной комедии» Данте подсказало ему другое название – «Человеческая комедия».

Одной из важнейших проблем в циклах А.С. Пушкина и у О. Бальзака является отображение противоречивых характеров: раздробленных и целостных, статичных и динамичных и т.д. Концепция человеческого характера вызрела у Пушкина в связи с его наблюдениями над произведениями западноевропейской литературы, в частности драм Шекспира и Мольера.

Ключевые слова: внутренний мир, психологизм, концепция личности, трагедия, литературный цикл.

Когда А. С. Пушкин писал первую из своих «маленьких трагедий» – «Скупой рыцарь», он ориентировался на произведения Мольера «Скупой» и «Венецианский купец» Шекспира. О. Бальзак к тому времени еще не создал свой образ Скупого. Пушкину был чужд характер «Скупого» Мольера, но он принял образный характер Шекспира, считая его своеобразным предшественником характера Барона. О причине, побудившей Пушкина сделать такой выбор, мы узнаем из его заметки: *«... У Мольера Скупой скуп – и только; у Шекспира Шейлок скуп, сметлив, мстителен, чадолюбив, остроумен...»* [5, 357].

Глубокое постижение человеческой природы закономерно приводило поэта к признанию противоречивости человеческих характеров, в которых могут существовать противоположные чувства и страсти.

Следует отметить, что пушкинский герой – рыцарь, живущий в классической стране рыцарства – средневековой Франции. Как отмечает Д. Благой, *«рыцари особенно презирали дельцов и стяжателей, щеголяли щедростью (подчас показной), которая была возведена в ранг рыцарской добродетели»* [2, 630].

Таким образом, избрав для роли скупого выходца из среды, в которой скупость не типична, Пушкин создает совершенно оригинальный тип личности. Сделав Барона скупым, он не превратил его в воплощение одной страсти, одного порока. Ему присущи самые противоречивые чувства и страсти. И вместе с тем доминирует одна – скупость.

Отметим, что характер Барона отражает не только тип рыцаря переходной эпохи от средневековья к Возрождению, а прежде всего пушкинское понимание индивидуализма, которое соотносимо с ренессансными концепциями индивидуализма. Ю. М. Лотман указывал: *«...Пушкин наделяет барона, который еще рыцарь, философией эпикурейца. Однако тут же совершается знаменательная подмена: ...гигантское властолюбие человека Возрождения трансформируется у барона в ростовщичество и скупость, эпикурейские боги, блаженствующие в мощном бездействии, заменяются золотыми монетами – богом нового времени»* [3, 238].

Индивидуализм Барона связан с его страстью к абсолютной, демонической власти, которую дает накопление капитала. Его монолог во второй сцене отражает сложные взаимоотношения личности с богатством. Первая фраза Барона свидетельствует, что он зависит от своих сундуков:

*‘Как молодой повеса ждет свиданья
С какой-нибудь развратницей лукавой
Иль душой, им обманутой, так я
Весь день минуты ждал, когда сойду
В подвал мой тайный, к верным сундукам...’ [5, 312].*

Видимо, не случайно ожидание встречи с «сундуками» Барона сопоставляется с нетерпением молодого повесы вроде Дон Жуана. Пушкин многократно подчеркивает, что сокровища заменили Барону и возлюбленную, и друга, и все виды наслаждения. Страсть к наслаждениям заменяется страстью к абсолютной власти, которая оказывается губительной. Барон становится рабом собственного стремления к власти.

Тщеславие и властолюбие А. С. Пушкин относил к разряду противоестественных страстей, эгоцентризм Барона основан на противоестественной страсти.

В монологе героя перед нами разворачивается цепь образов, в которых воспринимает себя Барон. Эти образы противоречивы, что указывает на несоответствие деятельности сознания и подсознания героя. Барон сопоставляет себя с царем, которому воины нанесли «гордый холм земли»; и в то же время называет себя рабом:

*‘Так я по горсти бедной принося
Привычну дань мою сюда в подвал,
Вознес мой холм’ [5, 312].*

Пушкин не случайно противопоставляет пространственное положение главных персонажей «Скупого рыцаря». Альбер, находясь в башне, ощущает себя «мышью, рожденною в подполье». Барон же видит себя на высоком холме, несмотря на то что самые счастливые минуты своей жизни проводит в подвале. Там жизнь барона, по сути дела, представляет реализацию его мечты о том, чтобы после смерти охранять сундуки от живых:

*‘...О, если б из могилы
Придти я мог, сторожевою тенью
Сидеть на сундуке и от живых
Сокровища мои хранить как ныне...’ [5, 346].*

Близость Барона к силам Ада Пушкин подчеркивает и тем, что герой воображает себя всевластным демоном. Демонизм в представлении Барона – абсолютная власть, подчиняющая даже злодейство, дарующая покой, обеспеченный сознанием собственной мощи. Герой, пряча деньги в сундук, в определенном смысле умертвляет их:

*‘Усните здесь сном силы и покоя,
Как боги снят в глубоких небесах’ [5, 344].*

Наслаждаясь своей властью, Барон тем не менее ощущает рабскую зависимость от нее. Происходит раздвоение его сознания. Мнимое всемогущество Барона на самом деле означает отсутствие желаний духовно мертвого человека, поработанного своей страстью. Страсть к власти способствует духовной, а затем и физической смерти Барона. Считая себя в определенном смысле царем, Барон неосознанно ощущает рабскую зависимость от своих сундуков.

Царь, с которым соотносит себя Барон, находится на вершине холма, в действительности же пушкинский Барон находится в подвале, его пространственное положение связано с хтоническими силами, представлением о смерти.

Значительную часть монолога Барона Пушкин посвятил осознанию героем собственной греховности. Так, он размышляет о том, какой ценой добыты сокровища.

Отношение Барона к своему способу добывания денег неоднозначно. Сокровища для него не только символ всемогущества, но и «слезы, кровь и пот...». Золото в сознании Барона персонифицируется.

За каждым денежным знаком для Барона кроется человеческая драма. Но желание получить деньги превозмогает в нем муки совести, и потому вдову, которая полдня с детьми плакала под его окном, он называет «притворщицей». Он подсознательно ощущает кощунственность собственных деяний, но сознание его дышит жадной властью, которую дает Барону золото.

Таким образом, в отношении к деньгам проявляется противоречивость сознания барона: богатство возвышается над ним как божество и вместе с тем таит в себе подсознательно ощущаемое возмездие:

*‘...Я захлебнулся б
В моих подвалах верных’ [5, 344].*

Чувства, испытываемые Бароном, извращены и противоестественны. Он наслаждается мнимым могуществом, покоем, созерцанием содержимого сундуков. Герой становится рабом собственного наслаждения, подсознательно ощущая его иллюзорность. Не случайно Барон испытывает муки совести, которая приобретает в его воображении облик зверя («*Косматый зверь, скребущий сердце – совесть...*»). Сознание персонажа раздвоено, сущность – противоречива, поскольку в его характере совместились, на первый взгляд, несовместимые начала: он – рыцарь, дорожащий своей честью, и ростовщик, презревший все ради власти денег.

Противоречивость сознания Барона проявляется и в том, что он пренебрегает рыцарскими традициями и законами морали, оклеветав сына.

Свои предположения относительно того, что наследник расточит его богатство, Барон проецирует на настоящие взаимоотношения с сыном. Мысль о смерти, убийстве, злодеянии полностью овладевает его сознанием. Представив себе, что его ждет после того, как сын вступит в наследство, он после долгих душевных колебаний заявляет Герцогу, что хотел его убить. Однако в представлении Барона физическая смерть ничто по сравнению с утратой богатства. Оклеветав сына, он не в состоянии вынести его обвинения во лжи, и рыцарское достоинство побуждает Барона бросить Альберу вызов. Противоречивость состояния Барона в этот момент настолько очевидна для него самого, что его покидают душевные силы.

Создавая сложный психологический характер, Пушкин раскрывает противоестественность стремления рыцаря к власти путем накопления богатств, проявившуюся в отношении к себе (вассал и «царь»), деньгам (друзья и враги), сыну, Герцогу... Герой, замкнувшись в «душевном подполье», становится рабом нежизнотворящей идеи. Он

давно мертв духовно, и его физическая смерть воспринимается как неизбежность.

Теме разрушения личности под воздействием власти денег посвящена новелла О. Бальзака «Гобсек».

О Гобсеке нельзя сказать, что он скуп и только. Он натура сложная, тонкая. По замыслу автора – это противоречивый характер.

Можно найти немало общего между взглядами бальзаковского Гобсека и пушкинского Барона. Когда Гобсек пришел к выводу, что золото представляет собой *«духовную сущность всего нынешнего общества»*, его обуревают разнообразные страсти, среди которых маниакальная, демоническая страсть к власти: *«Тщеславие! – это всегда наше «я»... все человеческие страсти в нынешнем вашем обществе, проходят передо мной, и я произвожу им смотр, а сам живу в спокойствии... Словом, я владею миром, не утомляя себя, а мир не имеет надо мной ни малейшей власти»* [1, 249].

Эгоистическая страсть порабощает в Гобсеке все человеческое, он ассоциируется с пауком, не случайно имя его переводится как «живоглот». Бальзак изображает, как хищническая страсть к властолюбию извращает то благородное, что было некогда в натуре Гобсека. Ведь в нем, как утверждал стряпчий Дервиль, *«...живут два существа: скряга и философ, подлое существо и возвышенное»*. Следует отметить, что в пушкинском Бароне, как отмечалось выше, рыцарское достоинство не утрачено (что и создает противоречивость сознания героя). В этом мы видим некоторое отличие в характерах «великих» Скупых Барона и Гобсека.

Жажда золота у Гобсека – это проявление инстинкта самосохранения: *«...Вот поживете с мое, узнаете, что из всех земных благ есть только одно, достаточно надежное, чтоб стоило человеку гнаться за ним. Это... Это – золото. В золоте сосредоточены все силы человечества...»* [1, 248].

Зачем золото Гобсеку? Для самосохранения? Для тщеславия? Для самосохранения у Барона, в отличие от Гобсека, есть меч (он все-таки рыцарь). Тщеславие? Тогда стоило ли переживать Барону все те душевные муки, о которых Гобсек никогда и не подозревал, все терзания, которым Барона подвергала совесть [4, 460].

‘...совесть,

*Когтистый зверь, скребущий сердце, совесть,
Незванный гость, докучный собеседник...'* [5, 345]

Гобсек не знал никогда этих моральных страданий. Он завоевал свои богатства, но не выстрадал их, как Барон. Барон считает, что от него самого, от его доброй или злой воли зависело, смилостивиться или обобратить вдову. А Гобсек убежден, что добро и зло вне его воли: *«Человек везде одинаков: везде борьба между бедным и богатым, и везде она неизбежна; лучше поэтому быть эксплуататором, чем эксплуатируемым»* [4, 460].

Таким образом, у Гобсека отпадает вопрос о моральных терзаниях. Не зная мук совести, Гобсек может желать залога только ради тщеславия. Ценой же страданий Барон платит за свою мечту о независимости, за то, чтоб ему стало «все послушно».

Бальзаковский Гобсек «...не верит ... ни во что», ни в какие убеждения и принципы, считая, что они зависят от обстоятельств времени и места: *«То, что является пороком в Париже, за Азорскими островами признается необходимостью...»* [1, 372]. Он глубоко убежден, что из всех земных благ имеется только одно достаточно надежное, чтобы за ним гнаться, – это золото. *«Личный интерес»* для него является *«единственно незыблемым»* чувством. Он называет простофилями всех, кто воображает, что приносит пользу своим близким, занимаясь *«установлением принципов политики»* [1, 377].

Нужно отметить, что Гобсек от природы не скуп. Из его тайного прошлого нам известно, что Гобсек был моряком, морским торговцем, объехал весь свет, видел самые далекие и экзотические страны. Диапазон его сознания не присущ ему от рождения; он объясняется колоссальным объемом того, что в течение своей многолетней жизни герой воспринял. Он все перепробовал, чтобы разбогатеть, даже пытался разыскать пресловутый клад – золото, закрытое племенем дикарей где-то в окрестностях *«Буэнос-Айрэса»* [1, 376]. Всепоглощающая страсть к золоту, к деньгам постепенно убивает в нем все человеческое. Гобсек – человек не эмоциональный, единственный раз в новелле мы видим его другим, что-то вроде улыбки озарило его лицо – когда он практически «честно» приобрел фамильные бриллианты графа де Ресто.

В Гобсеке сочетаются два разных противоположных типа: как вы уже упоминали выше, он «скряга» и «философ», он «подлое существо» и «возвышенное», как о нем отзывается Дервиль. У Дервиля, человека, некоторым образом, близкого знакомого Гобсека, к нему двойственное отношение: он осуждает старого скрягу, но в то же время говорит, что, если бы ему понадобилось взять попечителя своим детям – он взял бы Гобсека.

Казалось бы, что ничто не может вызвать его сочувствие или жалость, однако он отнесся к ситуации краха в семье де Ресто с каким-то своеобразным сочувствием и дает Графу нужный и дельный совет.

Еще одна ситуация немного раскрывает часть его души. После посещения квартиры Фанни он говорит Дервилю: *«Мне казалось, что я очутился в обстановке искренности и чистоты, где мне стало легче дышать...»* [1, 377]. На подсознательном уровне он понимает, что ему «легче дышать» «в обстановке искренности и чистоты», но страсть к деньгам уже поработила его сознание.

Таким образом, рассматривая один из аспектов психологизма в «Скупом рыцаре» А. С. Пушкина и «Гобсеке» Бальзака, мы приходим к выводу, что в основе характеров главных героев лежит противоречие. В психологии Барона – это несовместимость рыцарства и скупости: считая себя «царем», он фактически является «рабом» своих сундуков. В «Гобсеке» – подмена жизненной философии на «мертвую», которая неизбежно ведет героя к краху его личности и, наконец, к смерти.

Сознание и подсознание героев находятся в противоречии. Сознательно стремясь к власти, которую дает им золото, подсознательно и они чувствуют крах извращенной жизненной философии. Герои получают мнимую власть, но теряют свою личность, человечность. Динамика психологизма передавала тончайшие нюансы внутреннего поведения персонажей. Внимание акцентируется на объективности, сосредоточенности на духовном росте индивидуальности, потрясенной расколом в обществе. Герои начинают рефлексировать, подвергать анализу свои чувства, мысли, поступки. Эти процессы происходили в жизни общества, начавшего выходить из состояния полупатриархальной замкнутости, неподвижности и примитивности, когда психология становится предметом художественного исследования в произведениях Пушкина и Бальзака.

Литература:

1. Бальзак О. де. Собр. соч.: В 10 т. – М., 1982. – Т. 2. 630 с.
2. Благой Д. Д. Творческий путь Пушкина. 1826-1830. – М., 1967. – 630 с.
3. Лотман Ю. М. Несколько заметок к проблеме Пушкин и французская культура // Литература и искусство в системе культуры. – М., 1988.
4. Нусинов И. М. Трагедия скупости // История литературного героя. – М., 1958.
5. Пушкин А. С. Полн. собр. соч.: В 10 т. – М., 1975. – Т. 4.

CHAPTER 15

BOUNDARIES OF MULLA AHMAD AL-JAZARĪ'S METAPHYSICS IN THE CONTEXT OF PHILOSOPHICAL PARADIGMS

Hamdullah ARVAS¹

Introduction

It is considered that Mullā Ahmad al-Jazarī (d. 1640) was one of the masters of Sufi poetry, with his works full of love and affection and his success in connecting multi-layered meanings of the concepts. However, some reservations exist about the nature of the philosophical sense in his poems. One reason for this is that the philosophical meaning in Sufi poetry is often hidden by literary harmony. Another reason is that the distant stance towards philosophy in religious thought may lead pious readers to hesitate. Besides, since Mulla Ahmed al-Jazarī was a poet of the pre-modern period when religion dominated life, it may be wrong to interpret him with the positivist sensitivity envisaged by modernism. In addition, it is wrong to think that philosophical thought, like science, is a feature exclusive to this age. Therefore, interpreting his verses through conceptualizations guided by modernist perceptions and interests may seem anachronistic. In fact, Melayê Jizirî 's poetic imagination contains a deep philosophical view that reflects projections of eternal wisdom through his work. In his *Diwan*, we encounter a multi-layered metaphysical thought system conveyed through the language of love and affection (Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 27). This study aims to touch upon the wisdom pointed out by Mulla Ahmad al-Jazarī in his *Diwan* and make determinations in light of basic philosophical paradigms. Based on this, it will be examine the religious-philosophical perception reflected in Melayê Jizirî's poems in the context of the four dichotomous paradigms: *Rationalism-Empiricism*, *Dogmatism-Agnosticism*, *Idealism-Realism*, and *Unity/One-Multiciplity/Many*. Thus, in this research, boundaries of the Jizirî's metaphysics will be explained and revealed the projections of his metaphysical perception in philosophical thought.

¹ Assoc. Prof. , Şirnak University Theology Faculty, Kalam Department
<https://orcid.org/0000-0003-3710-5618>

1. Jizirī Metaphysics in the Context of Dogmatism-Agnosticism Dichotomy

In philosophical thought, it is considered that there are two approaches in this issue: one of those is I) *claiming the possibility of grasping knowledge/truth* and II) other one is *interpreting everything with infinite doubt*. Within these approaches, *dogmatism* is the viewpoint asserting the possibility of perceiving truth, solving metaphysical problems via a correct scientific method, and thereby acquiring knowledge of the absolute (Plato, 1997: 444a-e; Cresson, 2004: 27; Cevizci, 1999: 288, 385). Further, this understanding is divided into three parts: I) *naturalist*, II) *spiritualist*, and III) *idealist*. One of those is naturalists and they do not posit the universe as the result of a divine design, nor do they discern divine wisdom among phenomena. They base their theories on the atomism of Leucipe, Democrite, and Epicure. Consequently, they seek a solution by connecting the will in the cycle of chaos and cosmos to the laws of attraction in atoms that do not decay and disintegrate. However, the competence of atoms in the inorganic field is controversial. Because every event in this world arises from a cause and everything that happens in the world is subject to certain laws (Cresson, 2004: 52-58). According to spiritualists, the naturalistic approach is based only on quantitative values. Between these two perspectives, another view emerges. This understanding, called the philosophy of faith, essentially opens the door to an afterlife that raises people's hopes and reinforces their dualistic dimension (Cresson, 2004: 122-168).

In contrast to the metaphysical optimism of dogmatics, agnostics adopt a pessimistic stance. The most extreme form of pessimism is found in skeptics, who assert that the truth of entities perceived by the senses and it cannot be proven. Agnostics share this concern, particularly regarding the certainty of realities grasped by reason. While dogmatics claim that the attainment of metaphysical knowledge is possible; agnostics, for various reasons, do not share this view. Some agnostics argue that knowledge of the absolute is vast, like oceans, and beyond the intellectual capacity of human beings. Furthermore, even if one were to encounter this knowledge, there is no assurance that it is free from mental and sensory errors. Therefore, convictions about the absolute cannot be guaranteed. For example, Protagoras, an early advocate of this view, contends that even if one assumes partial or complete knowledge of the absolute, the power to verify this knowledge is lacking (Cevizci, 1999: 715). Even if the absolute is not inherently inconceivable for humans, agnostics argue that reasoning and ideas about it are meaningless unless one is certain of their accuracy. Thus, according to agnostics, dogmatism will never be able to verify it. Because of dogmatism and agnosticism present extreme views, it is prompting the emergence of faith as a third way.

Positioned between *dogmatists* (who assert knowledge of everything as possible), and *agnostics* (who claim that we cannot know anything); faith becomes a valuable perspective. When viewed in this context, every religious or philosophical doctrine encompasses elements of *dogmatism*, *agnosticism*, and the *doctrine of faith* (Cresson, 2004: 32-39). In here, it would be erroneous to adopt the philosophy of faith as a possibility based on pragmatism or reduce it to a form of self-deception. Like in the Islamic belief system, there is a kind of reflex of acknowledging the limits of reason's comprehension in the face of the pressures of existence and safeguarding against the uncertainties of the unknown (taqwa).

Examining this framework, it can be put forward that Melâyê Jizirî was dogmatic in acknowledging the truth of the universe and accepting the existence of God. However, recognizing the metaphysical realm of existence as beyond the limits of human cognition, so attaining knowledge of God (marifatullah) cannot be achieved with the certainty like knowing water, stone etc. Therefore, Melâyê Jizirî may be considered dogmatic in accepting the existence of God. On the other hand, as a requirement of the doctrine of faith, he may be noted that it is on the theistic agnostic side when it comes to fully understanding God's essence and attributes (Ferre, 1999: 89-99). Sample verses in the *Diwan* that potentially reflect this stance are as follows:

Remzên nucûm û hey'atê, 'eqlê mucerred naretê
Bênûr û 'ilmê wehdetê, dama di şekk û şubhe da

The mind alone cannot reach the remises of the stars and the heavens
 Without the light of the knowledge of wahdat, he will fall into the trap
 of doubt

(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 25)

Ser bi 'iczê diretin quwwetê derrakeyê ma
Rece'e'l-'eqlu kelilen we meta qame qe'ed

Our high comprehension **cannot bear its weight** in understanding all
 this

The exhausted mind is helpless in every effort for departure

Guftûgo çend e Mulla me'rîfetê peyda ke
Gewhera me'rîfetê nagehitê kes bi xired

Don't keep spilling your tongue Mulla with "qal u qil = speech" in the
 valley of marifah

Because no one has reached the substance of wisdom with the intellect
 (Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 86)

Pur me nezer da te ji ser ta qedem

Qed rece'e't-terfu we 'eqli kelil

We've cast **our reasoning eye** on you from head to toe

Our reasoning eye has returned vain, the mind is tired

(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 122)

2. Jizirî Metaphysics in the Context of Idealism-Realism Dichotomy

Philosophers are commonly categorized into two main groups in this issue: I) dogmatists and II) agnostics. Within the dogmatist camp, a further division exists between I) *idealists* and II) *realists* based on their stance on the attainability of truth. Throughout history, both perspectives have played decisive roles in shaping and understanding of truth. Realism, grounded in the experiential perspective of individual beings, relies on reactive and concrete reasons inherent in every human being from childhood, directly influencing essential life skills. Aristotle, considered the founder of this movement, locates the origin of objects in this world rather than in an otherworldly realm. According to him, the world directs human's thought of existence not only as a sign and symbol of the essential reality of the idea, but also as the place where the idea comes to life and therefore essential realities emerge. This perspective was reformulated as nominalism in the scholastic period, then evolved into empiricism, and later formed the basis of analytic thought during the Enlightenment. (Ayer, 1998: 115). In essence, realism in existence posits the belief that reality exists independently of human beings. Therefore, according to this perspective, the external world has objective existence regardless of the human mind. So that reality is not a creation, fiction, or constructed experience of the human mind; rather, it is something discovered by human beings. Knowledge of reality is considered independent of our thoughts about it, and it is acquired through human abilities. Asserting that reality can be known as it is, and realism contends that knowledge permeates reality itself (Heinzmann, 2009: 16).

The second perspective is idealism, a philosophical approach that applies the comprehensive cognitive abilities of human to the realms of being, value, and knowledge, unfolding in a continuous succession of numen. While Plato refers to more a priori categories, idealism is essentially grounded in schematic assumptions that idealize the best from the experiences of individual beings. In the process of reasoning, idealists make judgments based on intuition on matters that exceed human sensory and even rational capacities, even though their actions originate from the sensory field. The contemporary form of idealism was initially proposed by Plato and found expression through theology in the Middle Ages. However, over time, discussions centered on idealism gave rise to concept

realism and rationalism. (Atay, 1982: 20). In other hand, the ideal first transforms into universal concepts and subsequently evolves into the ideal language that precedes the existence of objects.

In idealism, despite the acceptance of external reality, there exists an understanding that positions it between the *less real* and the *absolute real*. The less real refers to the dimension of reality open to human experience, categorized as phenomenological in terms of being subject to senses and experiences. On the other hand, in one kind of idealisms, in Kantian idealism, reality can only be known as it appears to us; what appears does express something from reality, but appearance does not encompass all reality. While there are areas and objects beyond human knowledge, certain things can objectively be the subject of our knowledge (Reçber, 2001: 19-33; Tan, 2016: 79). Kant's idealism, despite rejecting some aspects of idealism, essentially operates in a manner pointing to empirical realism. He seeks to avoid skeptical idealism by accepting the material existence of objects, emphasizing that this existence is only in appearance. Simultaneously, he tries to avoid dogmatic idealism by asserting that our sensations and designs are not mere illusions but appearances of something real. However, his emphasis on appearance led him to be considered as an anti-realist (Tan, 2016: 77-78, 84). Another variant of idealism is modal realism, where proponents defend the possibility that *every sentence formed by humans can have an ontological basis*. According to modal realism, everything that can be thought is exists, that is, things with the possibility of being thought also have the possibility of existing. Modal realists argue that possible worlds can exist not only in the mind but also in reality, in a separate space-time plane isolated from our influence. For example, according to Lewis, a leading proponent of this idea, all possible worlds exist independently, each with their own inhabitants, and are spatiotemporally isolated from each other. The real existence of our world is not exclusive, and every world is real to those who live in it; This makes reality merely an indicator (Lewis, 1986: 2-3).

This dichotomous relationship, often traced back to the problem of universals, has played a decisive role in ordering, equalizing, or grading the connection between language, thought, and being throughout the history of thought. Plato, extending this gradation beyond the concept and into the realm, gave rise to movements such as Stoicism and Neo-Platonism, which explained the physical-metaphysical relationship with ontological dilution or opacity. The theory of ideas, gaining increasing independence over time, laid the groundwork for discussions on the relationship between language, thought, and being. This has led to debates in philosophy about nominalism, in religious thought about essence-attribute, in political theory about the theory of states, and in language

about the relationship between name (musamma) and the named (Horovitz, 2014: 110). For instance, the ongoing debate on whether God’s names are determined through tawfiq (divine guidance/revelation) or not, whether divine names and attributes are determined in eternity, or whether names such as God, Yahweh, Tanrı are established by consensus is a continuation of these historical issues (Arvas, 2020: 500-538). These discussions highlight the enduring significance of the idealism-realism dichotomy in shaping our understanding of language, thought, and reality.

Certainly, the concept of the real is established through the experience of what currently exists and is actual. On the other hand, the ideal is conceptualized by envisioning things that are expected to exist based on what currently exists. Hence, realism is grounded in sense and perception-based experience, while idealism is primarily based on imagination guided (Atay, 1982: 20). The concept of ideas extended the source of existence and knowledge to the transcendental sphere, portraying ideas as elements belonging to the mind of God. This perspective finds a counterpart in Berkeley’s idealism. According to Berkeley, although objects owe their existence to the mind, this mind is not that of a human being or humanity; it is *God’s mind* (Tan, 2016: 77-78, 84). The concept of God’s mind also intersects with the determination corresponding to “ayān al-sābite” in Sufi philosophy. The ayān al-sābite represent the realities of things existing in the external world in God’s knowledge and do not exist in the external world; more precisely, they are “non-existences/ ma’dūmāt” fixed in God’s knowledge. According to the principle of “ayān al-sābite,” which expresses the truths of things in divine knowledge within the God-universe relationship, things have fixed truths in divine knowledge (Uludağ, 1991: 4/198-199). The reflections of this imputation from realism to idealism are evident in Melâyê Jizirî’s *Diwan*. In the relationship between idealism and realism, Melâyê Jizirî, who respects the notion of “ayān-ı sābite,” attributes value to the visible world but does not limit reality entirely with this world. According to him, the Absolute truth signified by language, thought, and objects is different, even though apparent truth informs us:

Herfên keşandî katibî nûra ji rûh û qalibî

Yek yek bi ismê Wahibî î’rab û qeyd û nuqte da

The scribe wrote his letters, gave his light to the soul and body

With the name of Vahib, he has put the point, record and sprachregel
one by one

*Nûr in ji ser hetta qedem neqqaşê sermeşqê qidem
Pê zeyyînanî lewhê 'edem her yek ji yek dî çeşne da*

The engraver of the **eternal book** with those luminous letters from beginning to end

He decorated the plate of Adam with them in harmony with each other

*Ev şikl û sûret çeşne înl esl in li balater heyîn
Nisbet bi wan em saye yîn tertîbê Xellaqî we da*

The **origin** of these shapes and **forms** is in an exalted station

We are a **shadow** compared to them, in Allah's providence and arrangement.

*'Alem bi 'alem ew neseq ayîneyê yêt esmayê Heq
Nûra tecellaya teteq 'eks û xiyal û saye da*

With this style, the whole world became a **mirror** to the names of

Haqq

The light **manifested** in existence, reflected and appeared in the **form of imagination**

*Her hey'eta lê rûh û cism şiklê ku lê danî tilism
Dê wîfîq bin dixwazit ism lew herfî herf endaze da*

Every being has a soul, a form; each is laden with talismans

Each has become a name for the other, in its proper place without dispute

*Em têk huwiyyat înl heq înl ism înl ji mesder muşteq înl
Mewhûm û laşey' mutleq înl 'eks înl xwûya di ayîne da*

We are one true identity, names **derived** from the **same infinitive**

In absolute terms, we are things that exist, we are **reflections** that **appear** in the **mirror**

(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 13-14)

*Pertew ji 'eynê nûrekî tîn tîn tecella Tûr'ekî
Ew ser didit yek fûrekî her çendi leb leb qetre da*

Our light is from the **same** light, our manifestation is from the same Tour (mountain)

It becomes a boiling cauldron that eventually **seeps out drop by drop**

*Ev hûr û perî çehre but û latê cemalê
Der sûretê tehqîq Mela 'eynê mecaz in*

These heaven girls and fairies who are idols of beauty

In reality, it is not truth, it is all metaphor, O Mulla!

(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 138-139)

*Lami'a wê husn û nûrê ger çî dê dil şibet Tûrê
Batin e nayê zuhûrê bêhicab û perde ye*

With that beauty, the glow of light fills the hearts like the
manifestation in Tour (mountain)

It does not appear without veil and hijab, it is an **inner manifestation**.

*'Arifên me'naşinas in ew bi sed sûret libas in
Xeyrê mehbûb wan nenasin xef ji wan zanî me ye*

Those who (arif) are familiar with the meaning even if it is hidden
under **hundreds of veils**

While no one but the beloved knew this secret, we took this **secret**
from them enigmatically

(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 146)

3. Jizirî Metaphysics in the Context of Rationalism-Empiricism Dichotomy

In the history of thought, one of the concept pairs used to delineate religious-philosophical theories is the dichotomy of *rationalism-empiricism*. The central point of contention in this dichotomy is whether reason or pure sense and observation serve as the measure of truth. Empiricist theories assert that the only means of knowledge is observation, and claims that cannot be re-experienced under the same conditions are not considered true. Empiricists argue that the determination of the truth/verification of a claim or an object is possible only through experimental tests (Ayer, 1998: 115). Throughout the historical development of empiricism, three notable representatives have made significant contributions, particularly in the context of the concept of determinism. The first of these figures is Aristotle (384-322 BC), who equalized knowledge to experience (Aristotle, 1995: 323a 1-10). Another influential thinker is David Hume (1711-1776), and he established a boundary between the *dynamics of existence* and the *dynamics of knowledge*, asserting that the epistemological does not necessarily imply the ontological domain. This relative indeterminacy between ontology and episteme opened the door to a new form of rationalism

(Hume, 2015: 62). Auguste Comte (1798-1857), another significant philosopher, both deciphered what was hidden in Aristotle's ideas and rejected the understanding defended by Hume, which was akin to al-Ghazālī's theory of occasionalism (al-Ghazālī, 2015: 165-177; Comte, 2015: 156-157). Thus, Comte completely reduced ontology to phenomenology.

The fundamental difference between rationalism, *which allows judgments about unseen beings based on what is known*, and empiricism, *which forms certain judgments by generalizing principles from the knowledge of concrete beings*, lies in the fact that rationalism justifies religious-philosophical abstract claims, while empiricism does not attribute epistemic value to such claims. According to empiricists, the only means of knowledge is experimentation, and knowledge claims that cannot be re-experienced under the same conditions are been untrue. Consequently, when it comes to religious truths, empiricism may contradict the principles of rationalists based on broad acceptance, as it is a highly positivist attitude that restricts the capacity of reason to produce new knowledge to the visible area.

In contrast, rationalism, by questioning the reliability of the senses (as exemplified by the broken appearance of a stick in water), places reason at the forefront as a knowledge-forming value. It then opens the door to realities beyond the senses through intuition and certain holistic conceptions (Aster, 1959: 23). Significant representatives of rationalism emphasizing the importance of human reason and logic include Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, Farabi, Descartes, Spinoza, Leibniz, and Hegel. With the questioning of the reliability of the senses, reason emerged as a primary source of knowledge, and the thesis that the natural abilities of the human mind and the use of reason are the main sources of knowledge gained acceptance (Cevizci, 1999: 30). Therefore, rationalism encompasses both empiricism and a form of intuitionism. In the context of religious feeling and thinking, metaphysical rationalism justifies religious-philosophical abstract claims with a recognized rationality, while epistemological rationalism based solely on empiricism does not attribute epistemological value to such claims. In other words, empiricism, which does not reject the intuitive dimension of reason, does not inherently conflict with religion, while pure empiricism does not consider metaphysical propositions. In this sense, empiricism, limiting the capacity of reason to produce new knowledge to the visible field, may contradict metaphysical rationality.

Reason, serving not only as a receiver of knowledge but also as a means of producing new knowledge, holds a significant place in religious sciences. In religious treatises on aqāid, the role of reason is acknowledged, as it is essential to accept the principle that reason can lead to the invisible based on the visible

(Māturīdī, 2010: 66-70). Consequently, every believer can be considered part of the rationalist group, as it is inherently necessary to believe in the capacity of reason to discern the unseen based on the visible. This perspective doesn't diminish the value of empirical knowledge. Instead, it recognizes that the senses can be fallible under certain circumstances, leading to a need to rely on reason for final decisions. According to this stance and examining Mullā Ahmad al-Jazarī's *Diwan* within this dichotomy, it can be argued that he adopts an empiricist stance in perceiving the truth of the universe but leans towards rationalism when making decisions. While he attributes value to empirical knowledge through reasoning based on natural beings, he does not accept the reduction of God, who transcends the limits of perception, to the bounds of human empirical verification. In conclusion, in the interplay between rationalism and empiricism, Mullā Ahmad al-Jazarī can be characterized as a well-established/proven rationalist and a cautious empiricist. His rationalism aligns with philosophers such as Socrates, Plato, Farabi, Descartes, Spinoza, and Leibniz, who considered intuitive leaps as reasonable (Cevizci, 1999: 288, 385). Melayê Jizirî's quest for a rationality beyond the world of objects is evident in the love-themed dialectic of reality and metaphor:

Medrekê 'ilmê zemîrê şemmeyek wesfa te hat

Wer ne kî 'alem bi şe'n û qedr û miqdarê te bî

This is but a glimpse of their attributes

How can the universe reach the glory of your power (Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 182)

Pur ji can derrakeyek rewşentir û wala divê

Sûreta husna muqeddes da biket îdrakê rûh

Before the soul, it is needed a very high and **bright perception**

So that the soul may understand the image of holy beauty

Ger xeberdar î ji sirra "kuntu kenzen" guh bidêr

Da bi sed terzan beyan key me'nayê "lewlak"ê rûh

If you are aware of the secret of "Kuntu kenzen = I am a treasure",
listen carefully;

So that you can explain the meaning of "Levlâke /if you weren't", in a
hundred ways.

*Lami'ê sirra tecella ser li Tûra dil didet
Zebt naket wê mecalê sed hezar eflakê rûh*

The glow of the secret of manifestation eventually reaches the Tour
(mountain) of the heart

The **soul can't hold** that power with a hundred thousand heavens
(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 72-73)

*Tûr im bi dil û peyr[ewê] Mûsa yim ez
Ateşperesê nûrê tecella yim ez*

My heart is the mountain of Tour, I am the companion of Moses
I am a fireman of the light manifested there

*Herfên reqemê lewhê wucûda me bixwan
Da qenc bibînî ku çi Mela yim ez*

Read carefully what is written on our presence page
Then you'll see what a Mullah I am.

*Barî ji we 'ellemê ku xeberdar kirîn
Îro tu bizan Ademê esma yim ez*

Bari (God) made us aware of the secret of "Ve allama'l-asma"
Know that today I am that manifestation of asma

*Zahir tu perîşaniyê zatê me mebîn
Mecmû'ê di zatê xwe û tuxra yim ez*

Don't be fooled by my seemingly miserable state
I am a monogram whose outside does not fit inside, when in fact I am
same/one

*Înşayê 'ulûman li dinê ger tu nizanî
Zanî bi heqîqet ku çi îmla yim ez*

If you **do not know the subtleties** of **sciences** in this world
Look at me! Then you'll understand what kind of spelling I am.

*'Alem çi ye î'rab û hurûf û kelîmat
Ew lefze di nefsa xwe û me'na yim ez*

What you call the universe consists of description, letters and words!
I am the meaning hidden in those words

(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 95-96)

Herçî te divêtin ji me wer can bi xwe re be

Bes tu bike ferwar vewestayim ez

O beloved! Ask us whatever you want, take this life if you want

As long as you command me, I'm ready for any of your orders

Sed şîşî di dil da ne ji mihra te Melê

Daîm bi fixan mislê ney û nay im ez

Hundreds of skewers have cauterized Mulla's heart for your love!

That is why I am always wailing like a ney (flute)

Sed Nîl û Firat tîn û [di]diren qelbê me

Pê nahesihim [qulzem û] derya yim ez

Hundreds of Nile and Euphrates pour into our hearts

I don't **realize** it though, because I am a ocean

Tu ji nusxeyê tewhîdê vexwûn ayetê nefyê

Bê ayetê îsbat ku "illa" yim ez

Don't read only "ayat al-nafy" from the book of Tawhid

Know that I am "illa", the proof of the verse

Sed neql [û] rîwayet di meya safî megir

Îro weku ji pîrê xwe bi fetwa yim ez

The hundreds of narrations is not worth a single goblet of pure wine

Today, I am a permitted who has taken the hand of my master

Peyweste tu her bang dikey şubhetê ney

Bê yar û mey û saz ku ez [n]ayim ez

You don't call me all the time like Ney (flute)

I won't come to your invitation without wet, saz (instrument) and

lover

Îro tu ku Loqmanê zeman î xanim

Lutfek bi Melê ra bike sewda yim ez

You are the Lukman of time today, my Sultan (Lord)

Do me (Mulla) a favor, that I am in love

4. Jizirī Metaphysics in the Context of Unity/one-Multiplicity/many Dichotomy

The debate between idealism and realism also extends to the relationship between *unity/one* and *multiplicity/many* concerning the origin and transformation of being. As everything undergoes change, the discussion revolves around the fixed principle that ensures the wholeness and transition of essence in existence, creating a dynamic where *unity in multiplicity* and *multiplicity in unity* are interdependent. The foundation of this debate traces back to ontological theories equating existence and oneness. Aristotle, for instance, proposed that when two things are compared, either one is the *same, one, similar, and equal* to the other, or it is *other, many, opposite, and unequal*. Multiplicity, in this context, is attributed to divisible things, and many is viewed as the opposite of ‘one in terms of number (Aristotle, 1997: 427-435). Additionally, since everything that exists is a whole, it inherently possesses the quality of being ‘one’ (Brochard, 1943: 20). In the realm of ideas, the discussion extends to how a single concept, like “man,” encompasses all human beings. It delves into whether the properties of a thing constitute its nature, if this scope is an inductive constructionism, or if individual persons are realized by inheriting a share from the idea of man. The relationship between the one and the many is conceptualized either inductively or deductively, emphasizing the fundamental principle that every event or phenomenon has a causal connection with another event/phenomenon (Ayer, 1998: 127).

Metaphysicians may perceive truth as the unfolding of a principle or an a priori idea through analysis, likening ontology to a manifestation/expansion/transformation from unity to multiplicity, similar to deductivism in knowledge (Brochard, 1943: 69). Plotinus provides an early example of this view that combines unity and multiplicity. According to Plotinus, “The principle that is God has intelligence and reason. God is indivisible because he is immobile.” Despite God not being in one place and being motionless, when we consider God in beings that are multitudes, each being reflects God, according to its capacity (Plotinus, 2011: 31). In this reflection, the “One” signifies absolute being, perfect in the sense that it has no likeness. On the other hand, multiplicity or many refers to contingent beings that are similar, the same, or different with respect to each other. Since it lacks the degree of perfection, it is temporary. For example, disease is defined as the loss of one’s natural temperament, oppression as the absence of justice, and death as the loss of the soul’s function in the body (Ibn Miskawayh, 2020: 65-123). However, the unity and multiplicity relationship in the physical realm is distinct from in the metaphysical realm. In this issue, Melâye Jizirī adopts an approach that connects both poles. He interprets the

transition from multiplicity to unity in *epistemological* dimension, while evaluating the transition from one to multiplicity in terms of ontological dimension. According to Melâyê Jizirî, the principle of the transition from unity to multiplicity is *halq*, meaning creation or people, and the aim principle of the unity of multiplicity is *marifatullah* (knowing God). Sample verses in the *Diwan* that potentially reflect this stance are as follows:

Sirrê wehdet ji ezel girtiye hetta bi ebed
Wahidek ferd e bi zatê xwe û nînin çu 'eded

The mystery of **wahdat** is the secret that encompasses the universe sempiternal

He is one in His essence and one, **where is multiplicity?**

Di qîdem da ezel û 'eynê ebed herdu yek in
Sermediyyet we dixwazit ne ezel bit ne ebed

Eternity and endless are the same thing

Because there is no difference between eternity and endless in royalty

Ferq e wahid ji ehed lê di meqamê semedî
Bi heqîqet ku yek in herdu, çî wahid çî ehed

Although the words “**wahid**” and “**ahad**” are different in glossary

But in reality there is **no difference**, unites their difference “samed”

Yek e derya tu bizan qenc, çî mewc û çî hebab
Di esil da ku hemî av e çî av û çî cemed

Know that the ocean is the same ocean, even if its waves and bubbles change

Water is the essence of all, whether its glacial thaws or not

Afitaba ehediyyet di xwe da girtiye kewn
Ne ku 'ewrek heyê lê girtiye çehvên me remed

The **sun of unity** encompasses the whole universe in its essence

It is not the cloud that prevents you from seeing, it is the disease in the eye

Husn û zatê but û latan ji cemala Semed e
Ji misalê senemî weku tecella ye Semed

Idolized beauties are **reflections from the beauty** of “samed”

The mind is astonished by the manifestation of “samed” in the idol

Xeyrê derya niye sehra bi heqîqet emma
Ji rûyê keyf û kemê av bûye şubhet zebed
The Sahara is really no different from the sea
The real secret is the quality that turns water into foam

Kulle yewmin huwe fî şe 'ni nebî xafil jê
Her peyapey ji şu 'ûnan dikirit feyz meded
Don't forget that "every day he takes a work"
After every manifestation comes grace and help

Ger ti Adem bidiya sirr û 'ilim Iblîsî
Hînema ebserehu kebbere hînen we seced
If Iblis had known the secret of knowledge in Adam
When he saw her, he bowed for a long time

Çi zeman û çi mekân û çi cihan in çi felek
Çi meqadîr û tefasîl û hisab in çi 'eded
Time and space, this world and the heavens, **what are they?**
What are these measurements, explanations, calculations and numbers?

Çi munafat û luzûm in çi qiyas û çi misal
Ev çi tewlîd e çi terkîb e çi rûh in çi cesed
What are these mismatches and necessities in things, these comparisons and examples?
What are these compositions and analyzes, these souls and bodies

Ser bi 'iczê diretin quwwetê derrakeyê ma
Rece 'e'l- 'eqlu kelîlen we meta qame qe'ed
Our high comprehension **cannot bear** its weight in understanding all this
The exhausted mind is helpless in every effort for departure

Heyret û 'icz e serencami di babê nezerê
Key bi Xaliq nezera qasirê mexlûqê resed
Bewilderment and despair is the last limit of thought
How can the creature with its vicious understanding

*Halik 'iniGuftûgo çend e Mulla me 'rîfetê peyda ke
Gewhera me 'rîfetê nagehitê kes bi xired*

Don't keep spilling your tongue Mulla, stay in the valley of marifat
with "qal u qil= speech"

Because no one has reached the substance of wisdom with the intellect
(Melayê Jizirî, 2012: 86-87)

Conclusion

In this short study, it is tried to identify the boundaries of Mullā Ahmad al-Jazarī's metaphysical thought. Definitely, it is not possible to deal with a problem that covers the entire history of thought here. Therefore, classifications and determinations have been made through the dichotomies of dogmatism-agnosticism, unity-multiplicity, idealism-realism, and rationalism-empiricism, which are used to define important religious-philosophical theories and issues. The summary provides a comprehensive overview of the key points discussed in relation to Mullā Ahmad al-Jazarī's metaphysical thought. Accordingly;

1. Dogmatizm-Agnostisizm Dichotomy:

- Melayê Jizirî is identified as *dogmatic* in defending the truth of existence.
- However, he leans towards *theistic agnosticism*, acknowledging the limitations in fully grasping the ultimate reality (God essence and attributes).

2. Idealism-Realism Dichotomy:

- Melayê Jizirî's perception of natural beings is categorized as *realistic*.
- Melayê Jizirî attributes truth-value to the visible world but doesn't confine reality solely to it.
- The visible world informs about the truth, but Melayê Jizirî believes in a different absolute truth indicated by language, thought, and objects.

3. Rationalism-Empiricism Dichotomy:

- Melayê Jizirî engages in careful examination of the witnessed/experiential world, indicating consideration for empirical knowledge.
- He, however, does not limit his metaphysical views to empirical knowledge, showing a rationalist inclination.
- Melayê Jizirî supplements reason with epistemological leaps such as inspiration (*kashf*) and intuition.

4. Unity-Multiplicity Dichotomy:

- Melayê Jizirî interprets the transition from multiplicity to unity in *epistemological dimension*, while evaluating the transition from unity to multiplicity in *ontological dimension*.
- Melayê Cizirî interprets the principle of transition from unity to multiplicity for the purpose of creation (*halq*), and the principle of understanding unity in multiplicity for the purpose of knowing God (*marifatullah*).

References

- Aristotle. (1995). *Complete Works: Digital Edition*, ed. Jonathan Barnes. New Jersey: Princeton University Press.
- Arvas, Hamdullah. (2020). “Kelâm’da ‘Ta’lîm-i Esmâ’: Dil Teorileri Bağlamında İlâhî Mânaların İsimlendirilmesi Meselesi”, *Kader* 18/2. 500-538.
- Atay, Hüseyin. (1982). *Kuran’da Bilgi Teorisi*, Ankara: Furkan Yayınları.
- Atay, Hüseyin. (1987). “Bilgi Teorisi (İlmin İmkânı)”, *AÜİFD*, XXIX, Ankara.
- Ayer, Jules Alfred. (1998). *Dil, Doğruluk ve Mantık*, trans. Vehbi Hacıkadiroğlu. İstanbul: Metis Yayınları.
- Brochard, Victor. (1943). *Yanlış Üzerine Deneme*, trans. Hamdi Ragıp Atademir. Ankara: İdeal Matbaa.
- Cevzici, Ahmet. (1999). *Felsefe Sözlüğü*. İstanbul: Paradigma Yayınları.
- Cevzici, Ahmet. (1999). *Felsefe Sözlüğü*. İstanbul: Paradigma Yayınları.
- Comte, August. (2015). *Pozitif Felsefe Dersleri ve Pozitif Anlayış Üzerine Konuşma*, trans. Erkan Ataçay, Ankara. Bilgesu Yayıncılık.
- Cresson, Andre. (2004). *Filozofik Sistemler*, trans. S. Becarano,. İstanbul: Yeni Zamanlar Yayınları.
- Ferre, Frederick. (1999). *Din Dilinin Mantığı*, trans. Zeki Özcan. İstanbul: Alfa Yayınları.
- Garret, Brian. (2007). *What Is This Thing Called Metaphysics*, Newyork: Routledge.
- Gazzâlî, Ebû Hâmid Muhammed. (2015). *Filozofların Tutarsızlığı*, trans. M. Kaya-H. Sarıoğlu, İstanbul: Klasik Yayınları.
- Heinzmann, Richard. (2009). “Seküler Akıl ve Vahiy Dini: Thomas Aquinas’ın Sentezi Üzerine”, *Din ve Devlet İlişkileri: İslam ve Hristiyanlık’ta Temeller*, Editör: Richard Heinzmann ve Mualla Selçuk, Stuttgart.
- Horovitz, Josef. (2014). *Yunan Felsefesinin Kelama Etkisi*, trans. Özcan Taşçı. İstanbul: Litera Yayıncılık.
- Hume, David. (2015). *İnsan Doğası Üzerine Bir İnceleme*, trans. Ergün Baylan. Ankara: Bilgesu Yayınevi.
- İbn Miskeveyh. (2020). *al-Fawzu’l-asğâr: Tanrı, Nefis, Nübüvvet*, trns. Emrah Alağaç, Mehmet Zahit Sezer. İstanbul: Endülüs.
- Lewis, David. (1986). *On the Plurality of Worlds* Oxford: Basil Blackwell.
- Mâtûridî, Ebû Mansûr Muhammed. (2010). *Kitâbü’t-tevhîd*, ed. Muhammed Aruşî - Bekir Topaloğlu. İstanbul: Mektebetü’l-İrşâd.
- Melayê Cezîrî, Molla Ahmed, (2012). *Diwan*, trans. Osman Tunç, Ankara: TC Kültür ve Turizm Bakanlığı Yayınları.

- Platon. (1997). *Complete Works. Dijital Editon*, ed. John M Cooper.
Indianapolis: Phackett Publishing Company.
- Plotinus. (2011). *Enneades/ Dokuzluklar*, trans. Zeki Özcan. Ankara: Birleşik Yayınları.
- Reçber, M. Sait. (2001). “Realizm, Din ve Dünyevileşme”, *İslamiyat*, Cilt, 4, sayı 3.
- Tan, Necmettin. (2016). *İmana Yer Açmak*. İstanbul: İz yayıncılık.
- Uludağ, Süleyman. (1991). “Ayan-ı Sabite”, *Diyanet Vakfı İslâm Ansiklopesidisi*, İstanbul: Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı Yayınları.